War and Peace by Leo Tolstoy
Chapter Summaries
January 10, 2021

Contents

About this document

You can help improve this shared document by posting any suggested corrections, clarifications, or changes below the posts on the website at wpchaptersummaries.org.

These chapter summaries are based on the Louise and Aylmer Maude translation of War and Peace from Project Gutenberg, which is available at at http://www.gutenberg.org/ .

Cross-reference page numbers are provided at the end of this document for the 2008 Pevear and Volokhonsky (P&V) book published in 2008 by Vintage Classics, for the convenience of readers who are using that translation.

Book 1, Chapter 1

Prince Vasiili talks to Anna Pávlovna about Napoleon, and a court position and a possible spouse for his son Anatole.

Summary:

In July 1805, Anna Pávlovna Schérer is hosting a soirée in her apartments. Prince Vasíli Kurágin is the first to arrive and the two talk confidentially. Anna laments Napoleon's military success, and calls him the Antichrist. She believes that Russia must go to war to save Europe from Napoleon. The conversation moves from politics to personal matters. Prince Vasíli asks Anna about a court position Vasíli hopes his some can get. Anna indicates the job is going to someone else. Anna complains of Vasíli's youngest son Anatole, although she likes the Vasíli's other two children. Playing matchmaker, she suggests that Anatole should marry Princess Mary, who lives in the country with her wealthy father the old prince Bolkónski. Prince Vasiili would be happy if Anatole could find a wealthy woman to marry. Supporting his son Anatole is costing Vasíli a lot of money. He asks Anna to see if she can arrange a marriage between this wealthy princess and his son Anatole.

Quote from the chapter:

Russia alone must save Europe. Our gracious sovereign recognizes his high vocation and will be true to it. That is the one thing I have faith in! Our good and wonderful sovereign has to perform the noblest role on earth, and he is so virtuous and noble that God will not forsake him. He will fulfill his vocation and crush the hydra of revolution, which has become more terrible than ever in the person of this murderer and villain! We alone must avenge the blood of the just one.... Whom, I ask you, can we rely on?... England with her commercial spirit will not and cannot understand the Emperor Alexander's loftiness of soul.

Book 1, Chapter 2

The soirée continues. We meet Hélène, Prince Andrew, Lise and Pierre.

Summary:

As more guests arrive, Anna Pávlovna's drawing room fills with distinguished people from the upper echelon of Petersburg society. Tolstoy points out several of the guests. Hélène is Prince Vasíli's beautiful daughter. Hélène has come to escort her father Vasíli to another party he must attend. Also present is Princess Lise Bolkónskaya, Vasíli's pregnant daughter-in-law. She is beautiful and charming. Lise is married to Prince Andrew Bolkonsky, who will soon be leaving her to go to the Napoleonic war. Vasíli's son Hippolyte is also there. A young man named Pierre, the illegitimate son of Count Bezukov, arrives. Pierre is energetic but very lacking in social graces. Count Bezukov, Pierre's father, is one of the richest men in Russia and is very ill. Two other guests are Abbe Morio, who has a scheme for perpetual peace, and the Vicomte de Mortemart, a well-known French émigré. Anna Pávlovna flitters about making sure her party is going smoothly. Anna makes sure that each newly arriving guest is introduced to a tiresome aunt of hers who sits off by herself.

Quote from the chapter:

One of the next arrivals was a stout, heavily built young man with close-cropped hair, spectacles, the light-colored breeches fashionable at that time, a very high ruffle, and a brown dress coat. This stout young man was an illegitimate son of Count Bezúkhov, a well-known grandee of

Catherine's time who now lay dying in Moscow. The young man had not yet entered either the military or civil service, as he had only just returned from abroad where he had been educated, and this was his first appearance in society. Anna Pávlovna greeted him with the nod she accorded to the lowest hierarchy in her drawing room. But in spite of this lowest-grade greeting, a look of anxiety and fear, as at the sight of something too large and unsuited to the place, came over her face when she saw Pierre enter. Though he was certainly rather bigger than the other men in the room, her anxiety could only have reference to the clever though shy, but observant and natural, expression which distinguished him from everyone else in that drawing room.

Book 1, Chapter 3

More description of Anna's soirée and the guests. Pierre's conversation is a bit too serious.

Summary:

Anna's reception continues. The guests have formed into three conversation groups. Anna moves between the three groups trying to make sure that the party is running smoothly, and that no group becomes too loud or too dull. Anna shows off her two distinguished guest, the Vicomte and the Abbe. Vasíli's daughter Helena stands out as being quite beautiful. Helena's brother Prince Hippolyte is there also. He looks a little like her, but is not good-looking or impressive. At one point, to keep the party flowing smoothly, Anna asks the Vicomte to tell a story about the Duc d'Enghien who recently had a run-in with Napoleon and was killed. Elsewhere, Pierre has gotten into a serious disagreement with the Abbe. Both were talking too eagerly. Anna joins them and asks the Abbe how he likes the Russian weather. Anna does not want her party to become too serious. The Abbe takes the hint and drops the serious conversation, instead engaging in light banter with Anna about how charming and attractive the Russian women are.

Quote from the chapter:

Pierre had managed to start a conversation with the abbé about the balance of power, and the latter, evidently interested by the young man's simple-minded eagerness, was explaining his pet theory. Both were talking and listening too eagerly and too naturally, which was why Anna Pávlovna disapproved. "The means are ... the balance of power in Europe and the rights of the people," the abbé was saying. "It is only necessary for one powerful nation like Russia—barbaric as she is said to be—to place herself disinterestedly at the head of an alliance having for its object the maintenance of the balance of power of Europe, and it would save the world!" "But how are you to get that balance?" Pierre was beginning. At that moment Anna Pávlovna came up and, looking severely at Pierre, asked the Italian how he stood Russian climate.

Book 1, Chapter 4

Prince Andrew arrives at the reception. Andrew is a friend of Pierre and the husband of Lise. Princess Drubetskáya asks Vasíli for help with Borís' transfer to the Guards.

Summary:

Prince Andrew arrives at the party. Andrew seems to find all the people at the party tiresome, especially his wife Lise. Anna asks Andrew about his plans to go join the army. We learn that

Prince Andrew and Pierre are friends. They make plans to dine together later that evening. An elderly lady, a Princess Drubetskáya, sees Prince Vasíli and pesters him about finding a job with the Russian Guard for her son Borís. She reminds Vasíli he owes her a favor. Prince Vasíli and his daughter Hélène rise to go to their next engagement. Vasíli knows this lady will not leave him alone until she gets what she wants. He agrees to secure the transfer for her son Borís to the Guard. The elderly princess then ask Prince Vasíli to get her son onto Kutúzov's staff, but he says that's something he just can't do.

Quote from the chapter:

Influence in society, however, is a capital which has to be economized if it is to last. Prince Vasíli knew this, and having once realized that if he asked on behalf of all who begged of him, he would soon be unable to ask for himself, he became chary of using his influence. But in Princess Drubetskáya's case he felt, after her second appeal, something like qualms of conscience. She had reminded him of what was quite true; he had been indebted to her father for the first steps in his career. Moreover, he could see by her manners that she was one of those women—mostly mothers—who, having once made up their minds, will not rest until they have gained their end, and are prepared if necessary to go on insisting day after day and hour after hour, and even to make scenes. This last consideration moved him.

Book 1, Chapter 5

The guests at the reception argue about Napoleon. Pierre thinks Napoleon is a great man, many disagree.

Summary:

The conversation at the party turns to world politics. Most people in the group are very anti-Napoleon. But Bonaparte does have a few admirer's in the group, especially Pierre. Anna wishes Pierre would keep quiet, but she can't stop him from talking. Pierre jumps into the conversation on Napoleon's side. Anna clearly despises Napoleon. She hates that other nations have allied themselves behind Napoleon. Even some European aristocrats have joined Napoleon's side. On the other hand, some of Napoleon's supporters have become disgusted by Napoleon's extrajudicial executions. This has caused Napoleon to lose support across Europe. Pierre likes Napoleon. He thinks what Napoleon is doing is necessary and is what will be good for the people in the long run. Political feelings begin to boil over. Then, Hippolyte, to change the subject, tells what he claims is a very funny story. It's a stupid story and not at all funny, but at least Hippolyte manages to put a stop to the unpleasant political argument which was starting to boil over.

Quote from the chapter:

"Won't you come over to the other table?" suggested Anna Pávlovna. But Pierre continued his speech without heeding her. "No," cried he, becoming more and more eager, "Napoleon is great because he rose superior to the Revolution, suppressed its abuses, preserved all that was good in it—equality of citizenship and freedom of speech and of the press—and only for that reason did he obtain power." "Yes, if having obtained power, without availing himself of it to commit murder he had restored it to the rightful king, I should have called him a great man," remarked the vicomte.

Book 1, Chapter 6

Talking over their plans, Pierre says he won't fight Napoleon. Andrew is not happy with his present life and will join the army.

Summary:

Everyone leaves the soirée. Despite their political disagreements and Pierre's general awkwardness, he and Anna manage to part pleasantly. During the party, Anna Pávlovna had already managed to speak to Lise about the match she contemplated between Anatole and the little princess' sister-in-law. When leaving, Hippolyte acts flirty with Lise. Then, Pierre goes over to Andrew's house like one quite at home. Andrew returns and they talk a little bit about the party. Then, Andrew asks Pierre about what he plans to do with his life. For the last few months Pierre has been trying to decide what work he wants to do. Pierre says he can't join the army or diplomatic corps because he doesn't want to fight Napoleon, who he likes. Andrew says he is joining the army anyway. They joke that to have wars people need to fight regardless of their opinions. Andrew is going to the war because he is not happy where he is.

Quote from the chapter:

If it were a war for freedom I could understand it and should be the first to enter the army; but to help England and Austria against the greatest man in the world is not right." .... "If no one fought except on his own conviction, there would be no wars," he said. "And that would be splendid," said Pierre. Prince Andrew smiled ironically. "Very likely it would be splendid, but it will never come about...." "Well, why are you going to the war?" asked Pierre. "What for? I don't know. I must. Besides that I am going...." He paused. "I am going because the life I am leading here does not suit me!"

Book 1, Chapter 7

Lise complains of how Prince Andrew is treating her and his leaving her to go to war.

Summary:

Lise returns home, finding Andrew and Pierre there talking. She mildly chides Pierre for being argumentative at the party. Pierre says he wishes he could convince Andrew not to go to the war. Lise very much agrees. She would rather Andrew focus on his career, that he could possibly become an aide-de-camp to the Emperor. Andrew is very polite, but cold with his wife Lise. Lise complains of Andrew's recent unfriendliness to her, and about being sent to the country. Andrew and Lise are on the point of arguing. Uncomfortable with the pending argument between Lise and Andrew, Pierre begins to leave, but Lise instead takes leave of the two. It's clear Lise and Andrew are not getting along, despite the politeness they show around others.

Quote from the chapter:

the little princess suddenly, her pretty face all at once distorted by a tearful grimace. "I have long wanted to ask you, Andrew, why you have changed so to me? What have I done to you? You are going to the war and have no pity for me. Why is it?"

Book 1, Chapter 8

Andrew advises Pierre not to marry until he's old. He asks Pierre to give up his dissolute lifestyle, and Pierre agrees.

Summary:

Pierre and Andrew dine in Andrew's luxurious dining room. Halfway through dinner, Andrew tells Pierre he should never marry. Andrew says that marriage is very bad, because it ties a man down with lots of foolish things and prevents focusing on success. Selfish, vain, stupid, trivial in everything—that's what women are when you see them in their true colors! Andrew tells him. Pierre is really surprised to hear Andrew talk like this. Pierre has always seen Andrew as very focused. Pierre says he doesn't know what he wants to do. Andrew also asks Pierre to give up visiting those Kurágins and leading that sort of life. It suits you so badly—all this debauchery, dissipation, and the rest of it!. Pierre promises to give up this dissolute lifestyle.

Quote from the chapter:

"Never, never marry, my dear fellow! That's my advice: never marry till you can say to yourself that you have done all you are capable of, and until you have ceased to love the woman of your choice and have seen her plainly as she is, or else you will make a cruel and irrevocable mistake.

Book 1, Chapter 9

Breaking his promise, after leaving Andrew Pierre goes directly to the Kurágin's.

Summary:

Pierre goes directly to the Kurágin's, despite just having promised Andrew he would reform. As expected, when he gets there, he finds Dólokhov, Anatole Kurágin and other friends drinking. It's a chaotic party. Pierre begins to drink quickly to catch up with his friends. Dólokhov has made a bet with an Englishman to drink a whole bottle of rum while sitting on the windowsill. They have a bear there in the room for some reason. Dólokhov wins his dangerous drinking bet, and then Pierre wants to try it. His friends think Pierre will fall out the window and kill himself if he tries to repeat Dólokhov's dangerous stunt, so to distract him they all decide to leave to visit some actresses. They will take the bear along.

Quote from the chapter:

Anatole kept on refilling Pierre's glass while explaining that Dólokhov was betting with Stevens, an English naval officer, that he would drink a bottle of rum sitting on the outer ledge of the third floor window with his legs hanging out.

Book 1, Chapter 10

Borís gets his guard position. The Rostóv's receive St. Natalia's day visitors. The is speculation about who will inherit the Bezúkhov fortune.

Summary:

Prince Vasíli obtains a transfer for Borís to the Semenov Guards, as he promised his mother Anna Mikháylovna. Anna Mikháylovna was related to the Rostóv's and stayed with them while in Moscow. She arrived there on St. Natalia's day, the name day of both Countess Rostóv and her daughter. It's after Pierre's, Dólokhov's and Anatole's escapade with the bear. For this, Dólokhov has been demoted and the others sent out of Petersburg. (They tied a policeman to the bear and threw them both in the river!) A big name day dinner celebration for eighty guests is being prepared at the Rostóv house. All day visitors have been passing through the house with name day greetings. Count Rostóv is inviting all the visitors to dinner. With one visitor, the Countess gossips about Pierre's antics with the bear and wonders if the old Counts immense fortune will be left to Pierre or Vasíli.

Quote from the chapter:

"Well, as I was saying, Prince Vasíli is the next heir through his wife, but the count is very fond of Pierre, looked after his education, and wrote to the Emperor about him; so that in the case of his death—and he is so ill that he may die at any moment, and Dr. Lorrain has come from Petersburg—no one knows who will inherit his immense fortune, Pierre or Prince Vasíli. Forty thousand serfs and millions of rubles!

Book 1, Chapter 11

Natásha and the other young people playfully run through the room where Countess Rostóv is receiving well-wishers.

Summary:

The Countess is receiving her final visitors. The guests are on the point of departing. Just then, two children run into the room. Natásha, laughing, is flippantly acting childish, playing with a doll, as other young people participate in this frolicsome group, who have just accidently knocked over a chair. Borís and Nicholas are in the group. Now and then the youths glance at one another, hardly able to suppress their laughter. The two women who have been gossiping are amused by the charming young people who are being so playful. Natásha, unable to control her laughter, runs from the room, followed by others of the young people.

Quote from the chapter:

Meanwhile the younger generation: Borís, the officer, Anna Mikháylovna's son; Nicholas, the undergraduate, the count's eldest son; Sónya, the count's fifteen-year-old niece, and little Pétya, his youngest boy, had all settled down in the drawing room and were obviously trying to restrain within the bounds of decorum the excitement and mirth that shone in all their faces.

Book 1, Chapter 12

The visit in the drawing room of Countess Rostóv continues. The Countess talks with a visitor about her children and the war.

Summary:

The only young people remaining in the drawing room, not counting the young lady visitor and the countess' eldest daughter (who was four years older than her sister and behaved already like a grown-up person), were Nicholas and Sónya, the niece. The visitor learns that Nicholas plans to join the army, as Borís has already done. Talk turns to the impending war. Nicolas wants to go, and plans to leave soon. Nicholas and Sónya are in love. The adults talk generally about raising children. Natásha is charming and a good singer. Véra is nice also, but a bit serious. The guests got up and took their leave, promising to return to dinner. "What manners! I thought they would never go," said the countess, when she had seen her guests out.

Quote from the chapter:

Sónya was a slender little brunette with a tender look in her eyes which were veiled by long lashes, thick black plaits coiling twice round her head, and a tawny tint in her complexion and especially in the color of her slender but graceful and muscular arms and neck. By the grace of her movements, by the softness and flexibility of her small limbs, and by a certain coyness and reserve of manner, she reminded one of a pretty, half-grown kitten which promises to become a beautiful little cat. She evidently considered it proper to show an interest in the general conversation by smiling, but in spite of herself her eyes under their thick long lashes watched her cousin who was going to join the army, with such passionate girlish adoration that her smile could not for a single instant impose upon anyone, and it was clear that the kitten had settled down only to spring up with more energy and again play with her cousin as soon as they too could, like Natásha and Borís, escape from the drawing room.

Book 1, Chapter 13

Sónya & Nicholas meet in the conservatory, followed by Natásha & Borís.

Summary:

After leaving the drawing room, Natásha runs into the conservatory. She hides and lets Borís walk past her. Still hidden, she sees Sónya and Nicholas kiss after resolving a minor tiff. When Sónya and Nicholas walk away, Natásha calls Borís and kisses him. Borís says he wants to marry Natásha, but they need to wait four years and should not be kissing now. Natásha and Borís agree that they should marry in four years, when Natásha will be sixteen.

Quote from the chapter:

"Natásha," he said, "you know that I love you, but...." "You are in love with me?" Natásha broke in. "Yes, I am, but please don't let us do like that.... In another four years ... then I will ask for your hand." Natásha considered. "Thirteen, fourteen, fifteen, sixteen," she counted on her slender little fingers. "All right! Then it's settled?" A smile of joy and satisfaction lit up her eager face. "Settled!" replied Borís.

Book 1, Chapter 14

We meet Véra Rostóv; Princess Anna talks with the Countess Rostóv.

Summary:

After receiving her last visitors, the Countess Rostóv talks with her old friend, Princess Anna Mikháylovna. The Countess asks her eldest daughter, Véra, to leave the drawing room. In the sitting room Véra notices two couples sitting, one pair at each window. Véra exchanges some mild barbs with the young people. Meanwhile, in the drawing room, the Countess congratulates Anna for successfully securing a place as an officer in the Guards for her son Borís, while her son Nicholas is only going as a cadet. Anna credits Prince Vasíli's assistance for this. Anna then leaves to visit Bezúkhov, hoping to receive the money Borís needs for his army equipment.

Quote from the chapter:

"If you had told me sooner, Mamma, I would have gone," she replied as she rose to go to her own room. But as she passed the sitting room she noticed two couples sitting, one pair at each window. She stopped and smiled scornfully. Sónya was sitting close to Nicholas who was copying out some verses for her, the first he had ever written. Borís and Natásha were at the other window and ceased talking when Véra entered. Sónya and Natásha looked at Véra with guilty, happy faces. It was pleasant and touching to see these little girls in love; but apparently the sight of them roused no pleasant feeling in Véra.

Book 1, Chapter 15

Anna Mikháylovna and her son Borís go to see Count Bezúkhov.

Summary:

Anna and her son Borís go to the house of Count Bezúkhov, but he is too ill to see anyone and in fact is not expected to live much longer. So Anna instead asks to see Prince Vasíli, who is also visiting. Vasíli is married to one of the Count's nieces. Anna thanks Vasíli for his help in securing Borís' position in the guard. She hopes she and Borís may be able to see the Count in the evening. To one of his nieces she says I have come, and am at your service to help you nurse my uncle. I imagine what you have gone through, and she sympathetically turned up her eyes. Then Anna, whose hope is that the Count remembered Borís in his will, settles in to wait without having been asked to stay. She suggests that Borís go to see Pierre, who is also in the house.

Quote from the chapter:

"Still the same; but what can you expect, this noise..." said the princess, looking at Anna Mikháylovna as at a stranger. "Ah, my dear, I hardly knew you," said Anna Mikháylovna with a happy smile, ambling lightly up to the count's niece. "I have come, and am at your service to help you nurse my uncle. I imagine what you have gone through," and she sympathetically turned up her eyes. The princess gave no reply and did not even smile, but left the room as Anna Mikháylovna took off her gloves and, occupying the position she had conquered, settled down in an armchair, inviting Prince Vasíli to take a seat beside her. "Borís," she said to her son with a smile, "I shall go in to see the count, my uncle; but you, my dear, had better go to Pierre meanwhile and don't forget to give him the Rostóvs' invitation.

Book 1, Chapter 16

Pierre meets Borís and appreciates his candor.

Summary:

Pierre, who had never managed to choose a career and who had been expelled from Petersburg for riotous conduct and sent to Moscow was staying as usual at his father's house. There Pierre was received by his cousins as if he were a corpse or a leper. He was not permitted to see his father the Count and stayed mostly in his own rooms, thinking much about the war. There Borís finds him and relays Count Rostóv's dinner invitation. Pierre is confused about who Borís is, but the smooth Borís quickly puts Pierre at ease, assuring him that he and his mother are not seeking money. Pierre felt an unaccountable tenderness for this young man and made up his mind that they would be friends.

Quote from the chapter:

"Moscow has nothing else to do but gossip," Borís went on. "Everybody is wondering to whom the count will leave his fortune, though he may perhaps outlive us all, as I sincerely hope he will..." "Yes, it is all very horrid," interrupted Pierre, "very horrid." Pierre was still afraid that this officer might inadvertently say something disconcerting to himself. "And it must seem to you," said Borís flushing slightly, but not changing his tone or attitude, "it must seem to you that everyone is trying to get something out of the rich man?"

Book 1, Chapter 17

Countess Rostóv gives Anna the money Borís needs to join the army.

Summary:

After Anna Mikháylovna leaves to visit Count Bezúkhov, Countess Rostóva was upset by her friend's sorrow and poverty. She asks the Count for five hundred rubles. The spendthrift Count, who at that moment was busy preparing that evening's gala, agrees to give her the money. The family's finances are strained, and its a lot of money she is asking for, but true to form the Count is more interested in looking good than in being practical with money. He does not so much as ask what the money is for. And, he gives her 700 rubles, rather than the 500 she requested. Later, the Countess gives Anna Mikháylovna the money for Borís' military equipment. Anna and the Countess, the two old friends, weep with joy and this outward token of their lifelong mutual affection.

Quote from the chapter:

"Annette, for heaven's sake don't refuse me," the countess began, with a blush that looked very strange on her thin, dignified, elderly face, and she took the money from under the handkerchief. Anna Mikháylovna instantly guessed her intention and stooped to be ready to embrace the countess at the appropriate moment. "This is for Borís from me, for his outfit." Anna Mikháylovna was already embracing her and weeping. The countess wept too. They wept because they were friends, and because they were kindhearted, and because they—friends from childhood—had to think about such a base thing as money, and because their youth was over.... But those tears were pleasant to them both.

Book 1, Chapter 18

There is a large and very lavish dinner party at the Rostóv's for Natásha and the Countess' name day.

Summary:

Little happens in this chapter related to plot development; it consists mostly of a description of the lavish party given by Count Rostóv for his wife and daughter's name day, and how various guests interacted. Many people have been invited to the party, and a few of the more significant guests are mentioned by name. These include Márya Dmítrievna Akhrosímova, a lady distinguished for her common sense and frank plainness of speech, who upon meeting Pierre chides him for the affair with the bear in Petersburg. Another guest is Shinshín, a cousin of the countess' well-known for "a sharp tongue". Conversation touches on the war that had been announced in a manifesto, and about military recruiting. Véra's intended, Lieutenant Berg, is there. There is lively but friendly conversation. Berg and others talk about the most advantageous ways to join the military. The Countess talks with Pierre, who is unskilled in conversation. All in all, the splendid party comes off well and without incident.

Quote from the chapter:

The count went in first with Márya Dmítrievna, the countess followed on the arm of a colonel of hussars, a man of importance to them because Nicholas was to go with him to the regiment; then came Anna Mikháylovna with Shinshín. Berg gave his arm to Véra. The smiling Julie Karágina went in with Nicholas. After them other couples followed, filling the whole dining hall, and last of all the children, tutors, and governesses followed singly. The footmen began moving about, chairs scraped, the band struck up in the gallery, and the guests settled down in their places. Then the strains of the count's household band were replaced by the clatter of knives and forks, the voices of visitors, and the soft steps of the footmen.

Book 1, Chapter 19

The Rostóv's name day dinner party continues.

Summary:

At the men's end of the table the talk grows more and more animated. The colonel remarks that the declaration of war had already appeared in Petersburg and has been forwarded to the commander in chief. Hearing this, Shinshin asks And why the deuce are we going to fight Bonaparte? He has stopped Austria's cackle and I fear it will be our turn next." This antiwar remark at once evokes spirited opposition, particularly from a Russian colonel, who was an ethnic German, seated nearby. Nicholas also weighs in on the correctness of the war and in support of the Emperor's decision to oppose Napoleon. As if in counterpoint, at the other end of the table Natásha flippantly asks what is for dessert, an intentional breach of etiquette by the charming young Natásha. Natásha only desisted when she had been told that there would be pineapple ice. Before the ices, champagne was served round. The count and countess kissed, and the guests, leaving their seats, went up to "congratulate" the countess. After dessert, toasts begin and the Rostóv's splendid dinner winds to an end.

Quote from the chapter:

"I am quite of your opinion," replied Nicholas, flaming up, turning his plate round and moving his wineglasses about with as much decision and desperation as though he were at that moment facing some great danger. "I am convinced that we Russians must die or conquer," he concluded,

conscious—as were others—after the words were uttered that his remarks were too enthusiastic and emphatic for the occasion and were therefore awkward.

Book 1, Chapter 20

Sónya is upset, fearing she will never be able to marry Nicholas. Later, there is music and dancing.

Summary:

The card tables were drawn out, sets made up for boston, and the count's visitors settled themselves, some in the two drawing rooms, some in the sitting room, some in the library. Natásha notices Sónya is missing, and finds her crying alone in the hallway. Sónya is sobbing because Nicholas will be leaving for the army, and also because she's been told Nicholas will never be allowed to marry her. Natásha comforts Sónya and tells her she will be able to marry him. Then they return to the rest of the family where there is music and dancing. The young Natásha dances with Pierre, and later Count Rostóv dances the Daniel Cooper impressively.

Quote from the chapter:

Natásha began consoling her, but her face showed that she understood all the gravity of her friend's trouble. "Sónya," she suddenly exclaimed, as if she had guessed the true reason of her friend's sorrow, "I'm sure Véra has said something to you since dinner? Hasn't she?" "Yes, these verses Nicholas wrote himself and I copied some others, and she found them on my table and said she'd show them to Mamma, and that I was ungrateful, and that Mamma would never allow him to marry me, but that he'll marry Julie. You see how he's been with her all day... Natásha, what have I done to deserve it?..." And again she began to sob, more bitterly than before. Natásha lifted her up, hugged her, and, smiling through her tears, began comforting her.

Book 1, Chapter 21

Vasíli convinces Princess Catherine they need to destroy certain documents to prevent the Count leaving his fortune to Pierre.

Summary:

Around the time the Rostóv party was ending, the wealthy Count Bezúkhov had a sixth stroke. The doctors pronounced recovery impossible. Various visitors have arrived at his house to await the outcome. People wonder to whom the count has left his great wealth. With effort, Vasíli manages to get Catherine to understand that its totally possible that Pierre could inherit the Count's entire fortune, leaving Catherine and her sisters with nothing, if the Count has so specified this in his will and in a letter to the Emperor. Once he convinces her this is possible, Vasíli tells Catherine that they must find and destroy the will and letter, if they exist, to rectify the Count's mistake. Catherine says she thinks the Count keeps these documents in an inlaid portfolio under his pillow. Catherine throws the blame on Vasíli's protégé that sweet Princess Drubetskáya, that Anna Mikháylovna for having turned the Count against them.

Quote from the chapter:

"But, my dear," said Prince Vasíli suddenly, clutching the little table and becoming more animated and talking more rapidly: "what if a letter has been written to the Emperor in which the count asks for Pierre's legitimation? Do you understand that in consideration of the count's services, his request would be granted?..." The princess smiled as people do who think they know more about the subject under discussion than those they are talking with. "I can tell you more," continued Prince Vasíli, seizing her hand, "that letter was written, though it was not sent, and the Emperor knew of it. The only question is, has it been destroyed or not? If not, then as soon as all is over," and Prince Vasíli sighed to intimate what he meant by the words all is over, "and the count's papers are opened, the will and letter will be delivered to the Emperor, and the petition will certainly be granted. Pierre will get everything as the legitimate son."

Book 1, Chapter 22

Pierre is summoned to be with the Count. Anna Mikháylovna decides to go along with him to watch out for his interests.

Summary:

Pierre (who Vasíli sent for) and Anna Mikháylovna (who found it necessary to accompany him) go to the house of Count Bezúkhov's house. Although no one has asked her to do this, Anna jumps into the role of guardian and protector for Pierre, who seems characteristically clueless of what is happening. Pierre is surprised by how everyone in the room looks at him, casting significant looks at him with a kind of awe and even servility. A deference such as he had never before received was shown him. Prince Vasíli greets Pierre somberly, and they go into the sickroom where last rights are being administered to the dying Count, followed by the eldest princess, the priests and deacons and assorted servants, as if there were now no further need for permission to enter the Count's room.

Quote from the chapter:

"Perhaps the count did not ask for me," said Pierre when he reached the landing. "I'd better go to my own room." Anna Mikháylovna paused and waited for him to come up. "Ah, my friend!" she said, touching his arm as she had done her son's when speaking to him that afternoon, "believe me I suffer no less than you do, but be a man!" "But really, hadn't I better go away?" he asked, looking kindly at her over his spectacles. "Ah, my dear friend! Forget the wrongs that may have been done you. Think that he is your father ... perhaps in the agony of death." She sighed. "I have loved you like a son from the first. Trust yourself to me, Pierre. I shall not forget your interests." Pierre did not understand a word, but the conviction that all this had to be grew stronger, and he meekly followed Anna Mikháylovna who was already opening a door.

Book 1, Chapter 23

The old Count receives last rites, as various family members look on.

Summary:

Called into the Count's bedroom, Pierre sees the old Count, who in a wheelchair is receiving last rites from several priests who wear magnificent glittering vestments, with lighted tapers in their

hands, slowly and solemnly conducting the service. Surrounding the Count's wheelchair are the two younger princesses their eldest sister, Catiche, Anna Mikháylovna, and Prince Vasíli, the aide-de-camp, the doctors, and others. All were silently crossing themselves, and the reading of the church service, the subdued chanting of deep bass voices, and in the intervals sighs and the shuffling of feet were the only sounds that could be heard. When the priest's ceremony is completed, several of the bystanders carefully lift the dying Count from the wheelchair and place him back in his bed. Although awake, the Count is very weak and he is unable to communicate. Pierre is very uncertain as to what he should do, but Anna uses gestures to indicate to Pierre he should first kiss his father's hand and then to sit in a chair near the Count's bed. When the Count dozes off, Anna and Pierre leave the sickroom.

Quote from the chapter:

While the count was being turned over, one of his arms fell back helplessly and he made a fruitless effort to pull it forward. Whether he noticed the look of terror with which Pierre regarded that lifeless arm, or whether some other thought flitted across his dying brain, at any rate he glanced at the refractory arm, at Pierre's terror-stricken face, and again at the arm, and on his face a feeble, piteous smile appeared, quite out of keeping with his features, that seemed to deride his own helplessness. At sight of this smile Pierre felt an unexpected quivering in his breast and a tickling in his nose, and tears dimmed his eyes. The sick man was turned on to his side with his face to the wall. He sighed.

Book 1, Chapter 24

Anna Mikháylovna struggles with the Princess and prevents her from removing a portfolio believed to contain the Count's latest will.

Summary:

Everyone in Count Bezúkhov's house is waiting outside his bedroom. He is expected to die very soon. His niece Catherine has gone into the Count's bedroom and removed the inlaid portfolio that he keeps under his pillow. This portfolio is believed to contain a will the Count made last Winter leaving his entire fortune to Pierre. When Anna Mikháylovna sees her leaving with the portfolio, she rushes up and tries to take it away from the Princess. Anna Mikháylovna and Catherine struggle over the portfolio, each refusing to let go. Count Vasíli manages to get them both to let go of the portfolio, and he takes it. They all go back into the sick room. Soon after this, the Count dies. Although the will has not yet been opened, Anna believes that thanks to her Pierre will inherit his fathers fortune. Now that Pierre is rich, Anna hopes he will help her son Borís.

Quote from the chapter:

I don't even know what is in this paper, said the younger of the two ladies, addressing Prince Vasili and pointing to an inlaid portfolio she held in her hand. All I know is that his real will is in his writing table, and this is a paper he has forgotten....

Book 1, Chapter 25

A description of life at Bald Hills, the estate where Andrew's father and sister live, and where Lise will live while Andrew is away at the war.

Summary:

Prince Andrew is bringing his wife to Bald Hills, the estate of his father, the old Prince Bolkónski, which is about 100 miles outside of Moscow. Andrew's wife Lise is going to live a Bald Hills while he is away at war. Also living at Bald Hills are Andrew's sister Princess Mary and her companion Mademoiselle Bourienne. Although he loves his children, the Old Prince runs a very strict and disciplined house. He runs the house on a tight, unvarying schedule. For example, he gives Mary a geometry lesson every day at exactly the same time, and he's a harsh teacher. In a letter from her friend Julie, Mary learns Count Vasíli hopes Mary will marry his son Anatole. Mary and her friend Julie are both very interested in religion.

Quote from the chapter:

The princess looked in a scared way at her father's eyes glittering close to her; the red patches on her face came and went, and it was plain that she understood nothing and was so frightened that her fear would prevent her understanding any of her father's further explanations, however clear they might be. Whether it was the teacher's fault or the pupil's, this same thing happened every day: the princess' eyes grew dim, she could not see and could not hear anything, but was only conscious of her stern father's withered face close to her, of his breath and the smell of him, and could think only of how to get away quickly to her own room to make out the problem in peace.

Book 1, Chapter 26

Andrew and Lise arrive at Bald Hills. Lise will stay here with Andrew's family awaiting the birth of their baby, while Andrew is at the war.

Summary:

Prince Andrew and his wife, the little princess Lise, arrive at Bald Hills. They can't immediately see the Old Prince, due to his unvarying daily schedule. They go instead to surprise Princess Mary, who is practicing on the piano. Mary practices her music every day at this time. It's part of the rigid daily schedule set up by the old Prince. The little Princess, Lise, Princess Mary and Mademoiselle Bourienne have an affectionate and tearful greeting. Prince Andrew goes to speak with his father while the Old Prince is dressing for dinner, and the two talk of the upcoming campaign against Napoleon. The pregnant Lise will live at Bald Hills while Andrew is with the army.

Quote from the chapter:

(the Old Prince speaking to his son Prince Andrew) The house for your wife is ready. Princess Mary will take her there and show her over, and they'll talk nineteen to the dozen. That's their woman's way! I am glad to have her. Sit down and talk. About Mikhelson's army ...

Book 1, Chapter 27

At dinner, the Old Prince and Andrew mostly talk about the war with Bonaparte.

Summary:

At precisely 2:00 PM, they have dinner. at the table are the Old Prince, Mary, Andrew, Lise, and Mademoiselle Bourienne. After some small talk with Lise, the old Prince brings up the war. Most of the remaining conversation is between Andrew and his father about the war. Andrew thinks Napoleon a great commander, but his father the Old Prince has a low opinion of Napoleon's abilities. Andrew finds his father sometimes eccentric, and Lise is afraid of him, but Princess Mary has an almost religious reverence for her old father.

Quote from the chapter:

And the prince began explaining all the blunders which, according to him, Bonaparte had made in his campaigns and even in politics. His son made no rejoinder, but it was evident that whatever arguments were presented he was as little able as his father to change his opinion. He listened, refraining from a reply, and involuntarily wondered how this old man, living alone in the country for so many years, could know and discuss so minutely and acutely all the recent European military and political events.

Book 1, Chapter 28

Prince Andrew departs for the war.

Summary:

Prince Andrew is preparing to leave his wife with his father and sister. Princess Mary comes into Andrew's room to say goodbye. They talk about what it will be like for his wife. They talk about how it can be hard to live with the Old Prince. Mary venerates her father but wishes he would be more religious. Princess Mary gives Andrew a small antique icon to wear when he is away. Mary asks Andrew to be kind and generous with Lise. Andrew tells Mary he does not know why he and Lise are unhappy. Mary says he should pray about it. Just before he leaves, the entire household gathers to wish Andrew well. Andrew says goodbye to his father and makes some requests regarding the care of Lise. The old Prince is characteristically unsentimental in saying goodbye to his son.

Quote from the chapter:

"Well, now, good-by!" He gave his son his hand to kiss, and embraced him. "Remember this, Prince Andrew, if they kill you it will hurt me, your old father..." he paused unexpectedly, and then in a querulous voice suddenly shrieked: "but if I hear that you have not behaved like a son of Nicholas Bolkónski, I shall be ashamed!" "You need not have said that to me, Father," said the son with a smile. The old man was silent.

Book 2, Chapter 1

A Russian regiment prepares to be reviewed by Kutúzov, their commander in chief.

Summary:

On October 11, 1805, a Russian regiment is waiting to be inspected by the commander in chief Kutúzov. The regimental commander is uncertain as to how Kutúzov wishes the troops to look

during the inspection. He first has them clean up and put on their dress uniforms, but then learns Kutúzov actually wants the men to not look battle-ready. So, the regimental commander has them change back out of their dress uniforms. Dólokhov, the former officer who has been busted to the ranks because of the incident with the bear, is chastised for wearing a blue coat. Dólokhov agrees to obey the order to put on a different coat, while maintaining a defiant attitude with the officer.

Quote from the chapter:

Dólokhov slowly straightened his bent knee, looking straight with his clear, insolent eyes in the general's face. "Why a blue coat? Off with it... Sergeant major! Change his coat... the ras..." he did not finish. "General, I must obey orders, but I am not bound to endure..." Dólokhov hurriedly interrupted. "No talking in the ranks!... No talking, no talking!" "Not bound to endure insults," Dólokhov concluded in loud, ringing tones. The eyes of the general and the soldier met. The general became silent, angrily pulling down his tight scarf. "I request you to have the goodness to change your coat," he said as he turned away.

Book 2, Chapter 2

Kutúzov and an Austrian General review the troops.

Summary:

The Austrian General arrives and he and Kutuzoz review the troops. Nearest to the commander in chief walked a handsome adjutant. This was Prince Bolkónski, who is on Kutúzov's staff. Kutúzov asks about and talks to Dólokhov. Dólokhov says he hopes he will have an opportunity to redeem his reputation in battle. After the inspection, the soldiers go to their campsites as a choir sings. Now that Dólokhov appears to be once more in Kutúzov's good graces, an old companion of Dólokhov named Zherkóv tries to renew his friendship with Dólokhov, but Dólokhov rebuffs him. There are unconfirmed rumors circulating among the men that Austria has suffered a major defeat in the fighting.

Quote from the chapter:

"Is it true that Austrians have been beaten?" asked Dólokhov. "The devil only knows! They say so."

Book 2, Chapter 3

Definite news of Mack's defeat means Kutúzov can no longer delay going into battle.

Summary:

After reviewing the troops, Kutúzov and the Austrian General meet. The Austrian General wants Kutúzov to go on the attack, but Kutúzov is in no hurry to advance. It's believed that General Mack's army has been defeated by the French. However, without definite news from Mack, Kutúzov prefers to wait. Kutúzov asks Prince Andrew to write a memo documenting Kutúzov's reasons for not advancing on the French. Andrew is well-regarded by Kutúzov, although many of his fellows dislike him. Then General Mack arrives with news of the surrender of his army. This means that the Russian troops will now have to advance and meet the enemy. Andrew expects to

shine on the battlefield. Zherkóv makes a flippant remark to General Mack. This angers Andrew, and he reprimands Zherkóv for his rudeness.

Quote from the chapter:

The report which had been circulated that the Austrians had been beaten and that the whole army had surrendered at Ulm proved to be correct. Within half an hour adjutants had been sent in various directions with orders which showed that the Russian troops, who had hitherto been inactive, would also soon have to meet the enemy. Prince Andrew was one of those rare staff officers whose chief interest lay in the general progress of the war. When he saw Mack and heard the details of his disaster he understood that half the campaign was lost, understood all the difficulties of the Russian army's position, and vividly imagined what awaited it and the part he would have to play.

Book 2, Chapter 4

Nicholas catches fellow officer Telyánin stealing Denísov's money.

Summary:

The Pávlograd Hussars were stationed two miles from Braunau, where Nicholas is sharing a cottage with Denísov. One morning, returning from a night of gambling, Denísov gives Nicholas a purse containing ten gold coins to hide in his room for him. Shortly thereafter, when Denísov needs the money, he looks for it in the hiding place but the money is not there! Denísov and Nicholas look all over for the money, but it is gone. Denísov thinks maybe Nicholas is playing some kind of a trick on him, or that the servant has taken the money. But the servant has not been in the room. Nicholas realizes that a fellow officer named Telyánin, who had stopped by briefly that morning, is the only person who could have taken the money. Nicholas gets on his horse and follows Telyánin to an inn. Nicholas sees that Telyánin has the purse with the gold. Telyánin at first pretends its his money, but soon is begging Nicholas to take pity on him. Nicholas, disgusted with Telyánin, gives him back the purse, saying "If you need it, take the money," and Nicholas walks out of the inn angrily.

Quote from the chapter:

"I know it and shall prove it," said Rostóv. "I..." Every muscle of Telyánin's pale, terrified face began to quiver, his eyes still shifted from side to side but with a downward look not rising to Rostóv's face, and his sobs were audible. "Count!... Don't ruin a young fellow... here is this wretched money, take it..." He threw it on the table. "I have an old father and mother!..." Rostóv took the money, avoiding Telyánin's eyes, and went out of the room without a word. But at the door he stopped and then retraced his steps. "O God," he said with tears in his eyes, "how could you do it?" "Count..." said Telyánin drawing nearer to him. "Don't touch me," said Rostóv, drawing back. "If you need it, take the money," and he threw the purse to him and ran out of the inn.

Book 2, Chapter 5

Nicholas is in trouble with the Colonel for reporting the theft, but their conflict is soon overshadowed by the news of Mack's defeat.

Summary:

When Nicholas reported Telyánin's theft to the Colonel, the Colonel claimed it wasn't true. This apparently angered Nicholas. In fact, Nicholas challenged the Colonel to a duel. Now his fellow officers feel that there is nothing for Nicholas to do but apologize to the Colonel. Nicholas says the Colonel can punish him if he wishes, but Nicholas will never apologize. His fellow officers try to explain to Nicholas that the Colonel is only trying to preserve the Regiment's good name, and that in any event the Colonel has earned the right to be respected. Also, they point out the Colonel will make Rostóv pay for his obstinacy. Just then, a regimental adjutant arrives with news that, due to Mack's defeat, the regiment is about to advance the next day.

Quote from the chapter:

"I will allow no one to call me a liar!" cried Rostóv. "He told me I lied, and I told him he lied. And there it rests. He may keep me on duty every day, or may place me under arrest, but no one can make me apologize, because if he, as commander of this regiment, thinks it beneath his dignity to give me satisfaction, then..." "You just wait a moment, my dear fellow, and listen," interrupted the staff captain in his deep bass, calmly stroking his long mustache. "You tell the colonel in the presence of other officers that an officer has stolen..."

Book 2, Chapter 6

Kutúzov's army is retreating across the Enns bridge, with the French army in close pursuit.

Summary:

Kutúzov's army, falling back toward Vienna and destroying the bridges behind it, is now crossing the river Enns. At midday the Russian baggage train, the artillery, and columns of troops were defiling through the town of Enns on both sides of the bridge. The last one to cross is ordered to set fire to the Enns bridge. Far away on the other side of the Enns the enemy's horse patrols could be discerned. Trial canon shots are fired by both sides, but the French and Russian armies are still not within artillery range.

Quote from the chapter:

Now then, let's see how far it will carry, Captain. Just try!" said the general, turning to an artillery officer. "Have a little fun to pass the time." "Crew, to your guns!" commanded the officer. In a moment the men came running gaily from their campfires and began loading. "One!" came the command. Number one jumped briskly aside. The gun rang out with a deafening metallic roar, and a whistling grenade flew above the heads of our troops below the hill and fell far short of the enemy, a little smoke showing the spot where it burst.

Book 2, Chapter 7

Retreating Russian troops crowd across the Enns bridge as several French cannonballs sail overhead.

Summary:

Two of the enemy's shots have flown overhead while the Russian troops are squeezing over the Enns bridge. So far, the French shots have been inaccurate and the Russians crossing the bridge do not yet appear worried. There is lighthearted banter between the troops. Crowding on the bridge creates disorder, so that some wagons and horsemen block others' passage, creating a bottleneck. A civilian family in a wagon loaded with household possessions is trying to get through. The woman in the wagon, who has a baby, is verbally harassed. Despite the crowding and the as yet inaccurate French firing, the Russians continue to slowly make their way over the bridge.

Quote from the chapter:

A woman with an unweaned baby, an old woman, and a healthy German girl with bright red cheeks were sitting on some feather beds. Evidently these fugitives were allowed to pass by special permission. The eyes of all the soldiers turned toward the women, and while the vehicle was passing at foot pace all the soldiers' remarks related to the two young ones. Every face bore almost the same smile, expressing unseemly thoughts about the women. "Just see, the German sausage is making tracks, too!" "Sell me the missis," said another soldier, addressing the German, who, angry and frightened, strode energetically along with downcast eyes.

Book 2, Chapter 8

The bridge burning at the Enns river is botched, resulting in two Russians wounded.

Summary:

The last of the Russian troops and wagons squeeze over the Enns bridge. Only Denísov's squadron of hussars remains on the far side. Suddenly they see French artillery and troops on the horizon. Now only an empty space of seven hundred yards separates Denísov's squadron from the oncoming French army. The French artillery begins aiming for Denísov's squadron. Colonel Bogdánich rides up. Seeing the Colonel, Nicholas' attention fixes on their earlier conflict, as if it matters now. The Colonel asks why haven't they already set fire to the bridge and retreated out of range of the French. There's a brief and pointless argument about who was supposed to fire the bridge. By now, the French are close enough to fire grapeshot. Finally, the Russians manage to set the bridge afire and retreat, but not before two Russian hussars are fatally wounded. After this botched retreat, the Colonel is unjustifiably proud of himself. Medals will be awarded. And Nicholas is unnecessarily ashamed that he got scared.

Quote from the chapter:

An empty space of some seven hundred yards was all that separated them. The enemy ceased firing, and that stern, threatening, inaccessible, and intangible line which separates two hostile armies was all the more clearly felt. "One step beyond that boundary line which resembles the line dividing the living from the dead lies uncertainty, suffering, and death. And what is there? Who is there?—there beyond that field, that tree, that roof lit up by the sun? No one knows, but one wants to know. You fear and yet long to cross that line, and know that sooner or later it must be crossed and you will have to find out what is there, just as you will inevitably have to learn what lies the other side of death. But you are strong, healthy, cheerful, and excited, and are surrounded by other such excitedly animated and healthy men." So thinks, or at any rate feels, anyone who comes in sight of the enemy, and that feeling gives a particular glamour and glad keenness of impression to everything that takes place at such moments.

Book 2, Chapter 9

During their long and rapid retreat, the Russians win a battle with the French, and Andrew is sent to the Austrian court to report the news.

Summary:

Pursued by a hundred thousand men under Bonaparte, Kutúzov's army of thirty-five thousand is hurriedly retreating, stopping to fight only when overtaken by the French. Their only long-term hope is to unite with the main Russian army. Finally, in one battle just after crossing the Danube, the Russians manage not only to hold the field but to break up the French division pursuing them. This boosts morale, even though Kutúzov's army suffered significant losses in the battle. The Austrian general whom Andrew was assisting is killed, and Andrew's own horse is shot out from under him. A bullet also grazes his arm. As a mark of special favor, Andrew is selected to deliver the news of the Russian victory to the Austrian Emperor Francis. Arriving at the Austrian court, he finds them seemingly unimpressed by the Russian victory. Andrew is made to wait to give his report to the Austrian Emperor Francis.

Quote from the chapter:

Pursued by the French army of a hundred thousand men under the command of Bonaparte, encountering a population that was unfriendly to it, losing confidence in its allies, suffering from shortness of supplies, and compelled to act under conditions of war unlike anything that had been foreseen, the Russian army of thirty-five thousand men commanded by Kutúzov was hurriedly retreating along the Danube, stopping where overtaken by the enemy and fighting rearguard actions only as far as necessary to enable it to retreat without losing its heavy equipment. There had been actions at Lambach, Amstetten, and Melk; but despite the courage and endurance—acknowledged even by the enemy—with which the Russians fought, the only consequence of these actions was a yet more rapid retreat.

Book 2, Chapter 10

Andrew visits his friend Bilíbin and learns that Vienne was taken by the French.

Summary:

Prince Andrew stayed at Brünn with Bilíbin, a Russian friend of his in the diplomatic service. Andrew tells Bilíbin about the engagement and the unenthusiastic way he has been received in the Austrian court. Bilíbin explains that the Austrians take little pleasure in the Russian victory because they wish their own generals were winning battles. And, anyway, it's too late because the French have occupied Vienne. Andrew is surprised and shocked to hear this. What Bilíbin expects to happen now is for Austria to make peace with the French and turn against Russia. After the conversation, Andrew has a good night's sleep as a guest of Bilíbin.

Quote from the chapter:

"It is now my turn to ask you 'why?' mon cher," said Bolkónski. "I confess I do not understand: perhaps there are diplomatic subtleties here beyond my feeble intelligence, but I can't make it out. Mack loses a whole army, the Archduke Ferdinand and the Archduke Karl give no signs of life

and make blunder after blunder. Kutúzov alone at last gains a real victory, destroying the spell of the invincibility of the French, and the Minister of War does not even care to hear the details." "That's just it, my dear fellow. You see it's hurrah for the Tsar, for Russia, for the Orthodox Greek faith! All that is beautiful, but what do we, I mean the Austrian court, care for your victories? Bring us nice news of a victory by the Archduke Karl or Ferdinand (one archduke's as good as another, as you know) and even if it is only over a fire brigade of Bonaparte's, that will be another story and we'll fire off some cannon!

Book 2, Chapter 11

Next morning Prince Andrew meets Bilíbin's friends before leaving to call on the Emperor and others.

Summary:

Having spent the night as a guest in Bilíbin's house, Prince Andrew woke late and put on his full parade uniform. Walking into the study, he found four gentleman of the diplomatic corps who belonged to Bilíbin's set. These men weren't interested in war or politics. They cared only for high society, for certain women, and for the official side of the service. Prince Hippolyte was in this group, but he tended to be the butt of everyone's jokes. The men offer to entertain Prince Andrew while he is in town, but he tells them he needs to make calls that day, in addition to speaking with Emperor Frances. As Andrew is leaving, Bilíbin warns him to be prepared to do most of the talking, since the Emperor often has trouble making conversation.

Quote from the chapter:

*The gentlemen assembled at Bilíbin's were young, wealthy, gay society men, who here, as in Vienna, formed a special set which Bilíbin, their leader, called les nôtres. * This set, consisting almost exclusively of diplomats, evidently had its own interests which had nothing to do with war or politics but related to high society, to certain women, and to the official side of the service. These gentlemen received Prince Andrew as one of themselves, an honor they did not extend to many. From politeness and to start conversation, they asked him a few questions about the army and the battle, and then the talk went off into merry jests and gossip.*

Book 2, Chapter 12

After meeting Emperor Francis, Andrew decides he must return to the army because Napoleon is advancing on Vienna.

Summary:

Andrew is finally presented to the Emperor Francis. The Emperor's questions to Andrew reflect a general lack of interest in understanding the battle. After meeting the Emperor, Bolkónski was invited everywhere, and had to spend the whole morning calling on the principal Austrian dignitaries. Then he learns that Napoleon has crossed the Danube, because the guard at the bridge fell for a French trick. Going outside, Bolkónski finds the city is being evacuated before Napoleon arrives. Now on the same side of the river, the French are in position to cut off Kutúzov's army. He wants to get back to the fighting as quickly as possible since Kutúzov's troops are in great

danger. Andrew is imagining that once in battle he will display himself a hero and military genius. Bilíbin urges Andrew to remain in Brünn to avoid the danger, but Andrew leaves for the army.

Quote from the chapter:

"I come from the archduchess'. I heard nothing there." "And you didn't see that everybody is packing up?" "I did not... What is it all about?" inquired Prince Andrew impatiently. "What's it all about? Why, the French have crossed the bridge that Auersperg was defending, and the bridge was not blown up: so Murat is now rushing along the road to Brünn and will be here in a day or two." "What? Here? But why did they not blow up the bridge, if it was mined?" "That is what I ask you. No one, not even Bonaparte, knows why." Bolkónski shrugged his shoulders. "But if the bridge is crossed it means that the army too is lost? It will be cut off," said he. "That's just it," answered Bilíbin.

Book 2, Chapter 13

Andrew meets the army at Krems, where the Russian army is chaotically preparing to withdraw.

Summary:

The army is tired and poorly equipped, so Kutúzov sends Prince Bagratión's vanguard of four thousand men to stall the French and sends the rest on a 24-hour march to meet other troops at Znaim. Andrew wants to join Bagratión's men, but Kutúzov insists that he stay with the retreating army. Andrew makes his way back to the army. Things are in chaos on the roads, as the army and civilians flee the oncoming Napoleon. Andrew has to threaten violence to help a doctor's wife to get through. Andrew looks for the Commander-in-Chief, finds Nesvitski and another adjutant in a little village. They ask Andrew for any news, and inform Andrew the about the confused situation. Andrew goes to the house where Kozlovski is. Bagratión is also present. Bagratión departs from Kozlovski. Kozlovski expects Bagratión's rear guard to be utterly destroyed as it fights only to delay Napoleon's advance.

Quote from the chapter:

"Your excellency, I should like to be of use here. Allow me to remain with Prince Bagratión's detachment." "Get in," said Kutúzov, and noticing that Bolkónski still delayed, he added: "I need good officers myself, need them myself!" They got into the carriage and drove for a few minutes in silence. "There is still much, much before us," he said, as if with an old man's penetration he understood all that was passing in Bolkónski's mind. "If a tenth part of his detachment returns I shall thank God," he added as if speaking to himself. Prince Andrew glanced at Kutúzov's face only a foot distant from him and involuntarily noticed the carefully washed seams of the scar near his temple, where an Ismail bullet had pierced his skull, and the empty eye socket. "Yes, he has a right to speak so calmly of those men's death," thought Bolkónski.

Book 2, Chapter 14

An error by French General Murat delays Napoleon's advance and assists the Russian escape.

Summary:

Kutúzov is in an almost hopeless position. The French, after crossing the bridge at Vienna, were advancing in immense force upon Kutúzov's line. To enable escape, Kutuzoz sends Bagratión with 4,000 men to guard the rear. With the rest of his army, Kutuzoz will attempt a 24 hour quick march to rejoin the main army. Bagratión manages to get in front of Napoleon's army just in time. Being vastly outnumbered by Napoleon's 150,000 troops, many of Bagratión's men are not expected to survive. However, when French General Murat sees Bagratión's vanguard he mistakenly thinks its the entire Russian army. He foolishly offers a three-days truce. This is a very lucky break for the Russians, as it allows more time for its army to escape. When Napoleon learns of the 3-day truce, he is livid. He angrily overrides the truce and orders Murat to attack.

Quote from the chapter:

Bagratión with his four thousand hungry, exhausted men would have to detain for days the whole enemy army that came upon him at Hollabrünn, which was clearly impossible. But a freak of fate made the impossible possible. The success of the trick that had placed the Vienna bridge in the hands of the French without a fight led Murat to try to deceive Kutúzov in a similar way. Meeting Bagratión's weak detachment on the Znaim road he supposed it to be Kutúzov's whole army. To be able to crush it absolutely he awaited the arrival of the rest of the troops who were on their way from Vienna, and with this object offered a three days' truce on condition that both armies should remain in position without moving. Murat declared that negotiations for peace were already proceeding, and that he therefore offered this truce to avoid unnecessary bloodshed.

Book 2, Chapter 15

Andrew rejoins Bagratión. Expecting a battle and looking around the camp he meets Artillery Captain Túshin and sees Dólokhov.

Summary:

Andrew arrives at Bagratión's camp. A large battle is expected to begin very shortly, but no one knows just when. A guide shows Andrew around the camp. They find a group of soldiers just hanging out, talking, including an artillery captain named Túshin. The guide orders the men to return to their posts, and chastises Captain Túshin for having his boots off. Andrew and his guide go to the top of a hill, Túshin's battery emplacement, which provides a good view of the entire area. From the battery emplacement, they can see the French. The nearer Prince Andrew came to the French lines the more confident was the appearance of the Russian troops. They see a Russian soldier being beaten for stealing. On the front line the French and Russian soldiers are pleasantly chatting with one another. The garrulous, French-speaking Dólokhov stands out in this group of men. There is kidding about the strange-sounding French language. This somewhat friendly encounter between the opposing troops makes the pending bloody battle seem oddly pointless.

Quote from the chapter:

(Bagration's thoughts on seeing Andrew} If he is one of the ordinary little staff dandies sent to earn a medal he can get his reward just as well in the rearguard, but if he wishes to stay with me, let him... he'll be of use here if he's a brave officer," thought Bagratión.

Book 2, Chapter 16

Andrew is looking over the Russian troop positions and noting possible improvements when the French artillery begins firing.

Summary:

Having ridden round the whole line from right flank to left, Prince Andrew made his way up to the battery, which provided a view of nearly the whole Russian position and the greater part of the enemy's battery. Andrew discerns where the French are and how the Russians might defend their ground. From there, Andrew can see several weaknesses in the Russian line. He begins to think of a better way to arrange the Russian troops. He pictures to himself the course of events in the forthcoming action in broad outline. Then, Andrew happens to overhear Captain Túshin and a few others talking about life after death. Next, a French cannon ball comes whizzing into their midst.

Quote from the chapter:

Prince Andrew took out his notebook and, leaning on the cannon, sketched a plan of the position. He made some notes on two points, intending to mention them to Bagratión. His idea was, first, to concentrate all the artillery in the center, and secondly, to withdraw the cavalry to the other side of the dip. Prince Andrew, being always near the commander in chief, closely following the mass movements and general orders, and constantly studying historical accounts of battles, involuntarily pictured to himself the course of events in the forthcoming action in broad outline. He imagined only important possibilities: "If the enemy attacks the right flank," he said to himself, "the Kiev grenadiers and the Podólsk chasseurs must hold their position till reserves from the center come up. In that case the dragoons could successfully make a flank counterattack. If they attack our center we, having the center battery on this high ground, shall withdraw the left flank under its cover, and retreat to the dip by echelons." So he reasoned....

Book 2, Chapter 17

The battle begins, Bagratión's calm assurance and Túshin's initiative prove invaluable.

Summary:

The battle has begun. Murat, humiliated by his blunder at the bridge, has moved his forces to attack the Russian center and outflank both the Russian wings. Murat is hoping he can crush the Russians before Napoleon arrives that evening. The French seem poised to overrun the Russians with sheer numbers, but they are so disorganized that the Russians manage to hold them off for some time. Andrew encounters Bagratión and his aids. They head towards Captain Túshin who is directing his gunners. Andrew observes how Bagratión's calm, passive, reactive leadership style gives his men confidence in themselves. Behind Prince Bagratión rode an officer of the suite, the prince's personal adjutant, Zherkóv, an orderly officer, the staff officer on duty, and a state councillor, an auditor, who had come to observe the battle. A Cossack is hit by a canon ball and killed. On the advice of one of his sargents, Captain Túshin sets fire to the Schön Grabern village in front of the French. Immense masses of the French are coming down upon the Russians, who are in disorder and was retreating upon the Kiev grenadiers. Bagratión begins to organize a counterattack by the Russians, leaving no one to defend Túshin's guns. About Túshin and the battalion that had been in support of his battery all was forgotten.

Quote from the chapter:

"It has begun! Here it is, dreadful but enjoyable!" was what the face of each soldier and each officer seemed to say. "It has begun. Here it is!" thought Prince Andrew, feeling the blood rush to his heart. "But where and how will my Toulon present itself?" Andrew noticed that: to his the surprise, found that no orders were really given (by Bagration), but that Prince Bagratión tried to make it appear that everything done by necessity, by accident, or by the will of subordinate commanders was done, if not by his direct command, at least in accord with his intentions.

Book 2, Chapter 18

The initial French attack damages and disorganizes the Russian defenses, but they quickly fall into order again behind Bagratión's calm, confident leadership.

Summary:

Prince Bagratión, riding downhill towards where the fighting is taking place, begins to pass some horribly wounded Russian soldiers. Some of the Russian soldiers are retreating. Many Russians are firing at the approaching French infantry. The Russians are firing furiously, but clearly lack any sort of military organization. Bagratión gives no orders but acts like everything is going just according to his plans. He calls up the two battalions of the Sixth Chasseurs. Subordinates repeatedly beg Bagratión to flee for safety, but Bagratión remains where he is on the battlefield. Bagratión's low-key, calm and brave presence seems to inspire the troops. A company commander proudly marches his company past Bagratión towards the French. This company commander is struck down. Then Bagratión looked round and shouted, "Hurrah!" to his men. "Hurrah—ah!—ah!" rang a long-drawn shout from our ranks, and passing Bagratión and racing one another they rushed in an irregular but joyous and eager crowd down the hill at their disordered foe.

Quote from the chapter:

"Forward, with God!" said Bagratión, in a resolute, sonorous voice, turning for a moment to the front line, and slightly swinging his arms, he went forward uneasily over the rough field with the awkward gait of a cavalryman. Prince Andrew felt that an invisible power was leading him forward, and experienced great happiness. The French were already near. Prince Andrew, walking beside Bagratión, could clearly distinguish their bandoliers, red epaulets, and even their faces. (He distinctly saw an old French officer who, with gaitered legs and turned-out toes, climbed the hill with difficulty.) Prince Bagratión gave no further orders and silently continued to walk on in front of the ranks. Suddenly one shot after another rang out from the French, smoke appeared all along their uneven ranks, and musket shots sounded. Several of our men fell, among them the round-faced officer who had marched so gaily and complacently. But at the moment the first report was heard, Bagratión looked round and shouted, "Hurrah!" . "Hurrah—ah!—ah!" rang a long-drawn shout from our ranks

Book 2, Chapter 19

Due to command indecision, the Russian left flank is cut off. As the Russians attempt to cut their way out, Nicholas is wounded in the arm.

Summary:

The Russian right flank is able to retreat, thanks to an attack on the French by the Russian Sixth Chasseurs. In the center, Túshin's relentless battery slows the French. On the left, masses of French troops pour forward. Zherkóv is sent to deliver an order from Bagratión that the left flank retreat. However, the useless Zherkóv becomes frightened and fails to deliver Bagratión's order. Meanwhile, time is wasted as the hussar colonel of the Pávlograd regiment on the extreme left flank disputes an order given by the Russian general commanding the left flank. As the battle progresses, the left flank becomes cut off from the main Russian forces, leaving them no choice but to attack to try to cut their way out. The Russians launch a desperate charge on the French lines. Nikolai's horse is shot during the charge. Horse and rider fall to the ground, the rider's leg briefly pinned beneath the dying horse. Nikolai's left arm is badly injured in the fall. He felt that something superfluous was hanging on his benumbed left arm. It felt as if the wrist were not his. French troops run by him. Nikolai throws his pistol at the French and runs for safety. He is incredulous that the French want to kill him. Nicholas reaches the bushes where the Russian sharpshooters are hidden in the woods.

Quote from the chapter:

The general and colonel looked sternly and significantly at one another like two fighting cocks preparing for battle, each vainly trying to detect signs of cowardice in the other. Both passed the examination successfully. As there was nothing to be said, and neither wished to give occasion for it to be alleged that he had been the first to leave the range of fire, they would have remained there for a long time testing each other's courage had it not been that just then they heard the rattle of musketry and a muffled shout almost behind them in the wood. The French had attacked the men collecting wood in the copse. It was no longer possible for the hussars to retreat with the infantry. They were cut off from the line of retreat on the left by the French. However inconvenient the position, it was now necessary to attack in order to cut a way through for themselves.

Book 2, Chapter 20

The French very nearly cut off the Russian left flank, but are repulsed thanks largely to the brave actions of Timókhin, Dólokhov and Artillery Captain Túshin.

Summary:

The battle of Schongrahem continues. The infantry of the left flank is confusedly, running trying to get past the encircling French. Kutozov is able to pass through the French lines unharmed, but sees his troops in chaos. He tries unsuccessfully to rally the disorderly crowd of Russian soldiers. Then Timókhin's company of Russian sharpshooters, who have been hiding in the woods, open fire, Timókhin and Dólokhov fearlessly run at the enemy, and the French fall back for the moment. This allows the Russian infantry to reform. Meanwhile, Túshin's battery is relentlessly pounding the French with cannon fire and grapeshot. They have set the village on fire. Túshin fights so fiercely that the French suppose that here—in the center—the main Russian forces were concentrated. They have no idea that Túshin's four guns are not at all defended. Túshin is almost delirious with fighting. He keeps shooting, ignoring orders to withdraw. Finally, Prince Andrew is sent to order Túshin to retreat. Andrew remains at the front and sees to it that Túshin's battery with his two remaining guns withdraw. They withdraw, Andrew having gained great respect for Túshin.

Quote from the chapter:

Túshin's battery had been forgotten and only at the very end of the action did Prince Bagratión, still hearing the cannonade in the center, send his orderly staff officer, and later Prince Andrew also, to order the battery to retire as quickly as possible. When the supports attached to Túshin's battery had been moved away in the middle of the action by someone's order, the battery had continued firing and was only not captured by the French because the enemy could not surmise that anyone could have the effrontery to continue firing from four quite undefended guns. On the contrary, the energetic action of that battery led the French to suppose that here—in the center—the main Russian forces were concentrated. Twice they had attempted to attack this point, but on each occasion had been driven back by grapeshot from the four isolated guns on the hillock. Soon after Prince Bagratión had left him, Túshin had succeeded in setting fire to Schön Grabern. "Look at them scurrying! It's burning! Just see the smoke! Fine!

Book 2, Chapter 21

The Russians withdraw and in the evening review the battle. Captain Túshin is unjustly reprimanded, but Andrew comes to Túshin's defense.

Summary:

The firing has died down and the Russians begin to leave the field. The withdrawing Russian troops are ordered to abandon their wounded. Nikolas begs for a ride to leave the battlefield and Túshin kindly agrees. Nikolia rides on a bloody gun carriage. The French make one more small assault and are repulsed. It's a gloomy evening in the camp. The officers meet to review the events of the day. Several of the officers exaggerate their own accomplishments. Meanwhile, Dólokhov's valor in the battle was noted. A General reprimands Túshin for having lost two guns, but Prince Andre speaks up for Túshin's valor. As the dead and wounded are collected, including Nicholas, Bagratión demands to know why Túshin lost his guns. Andrew intervenes to help him avoid punishment, but he is disgusted that no one sees how heroic Túshin was—not even Túshin himself. The troops have settled at campfires for the evening. Nikolas Rostóv, is at Túshin's campfire. Alone, confused and dozing at the campfire, Nikolai remembers Natásha and life at home. The next day the French do not renew the attack. The remnant of Bagratión's detachment is able to reunite with Kutúzov's army.

Quote from the chapter:

It was all that they could do to get the guns up the rise aided by the infantry, and having reached the village of Gruntersdorf they halted. It had grown so dark that one could not distinguish the uniforms ten paces off, and the firing had begun to subside. Suddenly, near by on the right, shouting and firing were again heard. Flashes of shot gleamed in the darkness. This was the last French attack and was met by soldiers who had sheltered in the village houses. "Nobody wants me!" thought Rostóv. "There is no one to help me or pity me. Yet I was once at home, strong, happy, and loved." He sighed and, doing so, groaned involuntarily.

Book 3, Chapter 1

Now that Pierre is rich, everyone wants some of his money. Prince Vasíli and Anna Pávlovna are the worst. They especially want Pierre to marry Vasíli's daughter.

Summary:

Everyone around Pierre has begun consciously or unconsciously trying to get at his money. His architect, for example, convinces Pierre he needs to remodel his Moscow house. Vasíli, without being asked, starts acting like Pierre's financial manager. He diverts to himself some rent money due to Pierre, and also causes Pierre to pay a large deed for cousin, something Pierre didn't actually owe her. Vasíli and Anna both go to work on trying to get Pierre to marry Vasíli's daughter Hélène. They insist that Pierre remain a guest at Vasíli's house, and then constantly manipulate Pierre so he spends a lot of social time with Hélène. Pierre is so easily manipulated by Anna and Vasíli that he actually begins to think of marrying Hélène, despite never having admired her much at all in the past.

Quote from the chapter:

He was conscious of the warmth of her body, the scent of perfume, and the creaking of her corset as she moved. He did not see her marble beauty forming a complete whole with her dress, but all the charm of her body only covered by her garments. And having once seen this he could not help being aware of it, just as we cannot renew an illusion we have once seen through. "So you have never noticed before how beautiful I am?" Hélène seemed to say. "You had not noticed that I am a woman? Yes, I am a woman who may belong to anyone—to you too," said her glance. And at that moment Pierre felt that Hélène not only could, but must, be his wife, and that it could not be otherwise. He knew this at that moment as surely as if he had been standing at the altar with her. How and when this would be he did not know, he did not even know if it would be a good thing (he even felt, he knew not why, that it would be a bad thing), but he knew it would happen.

Book 3, Chapter 2

Pierre, lacking self-direction and easily manipulated, is steered almost against his will into marrying Hélène.

Summary:

Pierre is manipulated into marrying Vasíli's daughter Hélène by social pressure. In his heart, Pierre did not really admire Hélène. But Vasíli and others cause Pierre to spend a lot of time with Hélène. Pierre is rudderless and easily manipulated. Due to constant subtle hints, Pierre begins to think about marrying Hélène. He does not really know in his own mind whether he wants to marry her or not. He spends a lot of time with her, and realizes people consider them a couple, but Pierre does not propose to her. Fed up with waiting for Pierre to propose, Vasíli uses a silly trick to make the clueless Pierre believe he has proposed to her. One evening Vasíli suddenly congratulates Pierre on his engagement, (which in reality had never happened). The clueless Pierre falls for this silly trick and does not deny that he is engaged to Hélène. On the contrary, Pierre behaves as if he had actually proposed to her, which he had not. Pierre marries Hélène shortly thereafter.

Quote from the chapter:

Six weeks after Anna Pávlovna's "At Home" and after the sleepless night when he had decided that to marry Hélène would be a calamity and that he ought to avoid her and go away, Pierre, despite that decision, had not left Prince Vasíli's and felt with terror that in people's eyes he was every day more and more connected with her, that it was impossible for him to return to his former conception of her, that he could not break away from her, and that though it would be a terrible thing he would have to unite his fate with hers. He might perhaps have been able to free

himself but that Prince Vasíli (who had rarely before given receptions) now hardly let a day go by without having an evening party at which Pierre had to be present unless he wished to spoil the general pleasure and disappoint everyone's expectation.

Book 3, Chapter 3

Prince Vasíli takes his son Anatole to visit Prince Bolkónski, hoping to arrange the marriage of Anatole and Princess Mary.

Summary:

Prince Vasíli and his son Anatole plan to pay a visit to the Old Prince Bolkónski, obviously for the purpose of seeing if Anatole and the wealthy heiress Princess Mary might wish to become engaged. The Old Prince did not like Vasíli and resented the visit, but permitted it. Vasíli arrived with his handsome son. Prince Vasíli hoped Anatole could marry someone with money, as Anatole was a financial burden to his father. Anatole came in with a very entitled and condescending attitude. He allows he might marry an ugly heiress if she had enough money. Mary, for her part, found the whole situation very stressful. She felt unable to behave correctly in situations like this. Her French companion and sister-in-law tried to make her look more attractive, but actually only made her look worse, and she became upset to the point of tears. But she prayed about it for a few minutes, and found consolation in her religious beliefs, to trust everything to God and to be unselfish. Having calmed herself in this way, she went in to meet Prince Vasíli and his son.

Quote from the chapter:

Could the joy of love, of earthly love for a man, be for her? In her thoughts of marriage Princess Mary dreamed of happiness and of children, but her strongest, most deeply hidden longing was for earthly love. The more she tried to hide this feeling from others and even from herself, the stronger it grew. "O God," she said, "how am I to stifle in my heart these temptations of the devil? How am I to renounce forever these vile fancies, so as peacefully to fulfill Thy will?" And scarcely had she put that question than God gave her the answer in her own heart. "Desire nothing for thyself, seek nothing, be not anxious or envious. Man's future and thy own fate must remain hidden from thee, but live so that thou mayest be ready for anything. If it be God's will to prove thee in the duties of marriage, be ready to fulfill His will." With this consoling thought (but yet with a hope for the fulfillment of her forbidden earthly longing) Princess Mary sighed, and having crossed herself went down, thinking neither of her gown and coiffure nor of how she would go in nor of what she would say.

Book 3, Chapter 4

At their first meeting in the drawing room, Anatole thinks Mary ugly. He likes the looks of Mademoiselle Bourienne.

Summary:

The drawing room conversation began lively and chatty, thanks largely to Princess Lise. Everyone pretended to be old friends. Princess Mary was somewhat in awe of Anatole's beauty. Anatole was

quiet, but he projected a lot of self-confidence. Anatole found Mary ugly. Anatole and Mademoiselle Bourienne were discreetly attracted to one another. When the Old Prince entered, he at once made a very painful remark about Mary's new hair style, which brought tears to her eyes. Prince Vasíli and Lise defended Mary's hair style. In fact, the old Prince was worried Mary would leave him. Privately Vasíli tells the old Prince Anatole is no genius but would make a good husband for Mary. The Old Prince says Mary can wed if she wishes. Later, Mary is asked to play the clavichord. She thinks of wedding Anatole, and fails to notice the attraction between he and Bourienne.

Quote from the chapter:

"Not at all bad!" (Anatole) thought, examining her, "not at all bad, that little companion! I hope (Mary) will bring her along with her when we're married. The little one is charming. The old prince dressed leisurely in his study, frowning and considering what he was to do. The coming of these visitors annoyed him. "What are Prince Vasíli and that son of his to me? Prince Vasíli is a shallow braggart and his son, no doubt, is a fine specimen," he grumbled to himself. What angered him was that the coming of these visitors revived in his mind an unsettled question he always tried to stifle, one about which he always deceived himself. The question was whether he could ever bring himself to part from his daughter and give her to a husband.

Book 3, Chapter 5

After seeing Anatole and Mademoiselle Bourienne embracing, Mary declines the marriage offer and vows to never leave the Old Prince.

Summary:

Everyone except Anatole had trouble falling asleep that night. Princess Mary lay awake thinking about marrying Anatole. Something about this scared her, though. In the morning, her father told her of the offer, saying it was up to her to decide, although he did hint at Anatole's apparent interest in Mademoiselle Bourienne. The Old Prince gave Mary just one hour to make up her mind. After leaving her father's study, Mary happened upon Anatole and Mademoiselle Bourienne in a romantic embrace. When the hour is up, she declines the offer of marriage. She tells the old Prince "My desire is never to leave you, Father, never to separate my life from yours. Later on, rather than being angry with Bourienne, Mary plans to try to help her. Mary reasons that Bourienne must love Anatole very much to behave as she did.

Quote from the chapter:

Go to your room, think it over, and come back in an hour and tell me in his presence: yes or no. I know you will pray over it. Well, pray if you like, but you had better think it over. Go! Yes or no, yes or no, yes or no!" he still shouted when the princess, as if lost in a fog, had already staggered out of the study. Her fate was decided and happily decided. But what her father had said about Mademoiselle Bourienne was dreadful. It was untrue to be sure, but still it was terrible, and she could not help thinking of it. She was going straight on through the conservatory, neither seeing nor hearing anything, when suddenly the well-known whispering of Mademoiselle Bourienne aroused her. She raised her eyes, and two steps away saw Anatole embracing the Frenchwoman and whispering something to her.

Book 3, Chapter 6

The Rostóv family is thrilled to receive a letter from Nicholas.

Summary:

It was long since the Rostóvs had news of Nicholas, but in midwinter they received a letter from him. He sustained a little wound, but he had been made an officer and was well now, he told them. Receiving this letter was a tremendously emotional and happy event for them. They were proud of his valor in battle and his promotion but sad to learn of his wound. Nicholas' letter was read over hundreds of times, and the Countess did not let it out of her hands. Sónya wonders if she should write Nicholas herself. (Natásha has no need to write Borís, because she has forgotten about him by now.) For more than a week, the family got ready letters, money and all things necessary for the uniform and equipment of the newly commissioned officer. The letters, money for his outfit and various other things would be sent to his son by way of the Grand Duke's courier to Borís who would forward everything to Nicholas.

Quote from the chapter:

Natásha looked at Sónya with wondering and inquisitive eyes, and said nothing. She felt that Sónya was speaking the truth, that there was such love as Sónya was speaking of. But Natásha had not yet felt anything like it. She believed it could be, but did not understand it. "Shall you write to him?" she asked. Sónya became thoughtful. The question of how to write to Nicholas, and whether she ought to write, tormented her. Now that he was already an officer and a wounded hero, would it be right to remind him of herself and, as it might seem, of the obligations to her he had taken on himself? "I don't know. I think if he writes, I will write too," she said, blushing. "And you won't feel ashamed to write to him?" Sónya smiled.

Book 3, Chapter 7

Nicholas is rude to an unknown staff officer he meets in camp, who is Prince Andrew. Prince Andrew handles the situation well.

Summary:

Kutúzov's army, in camp before Olmutz, was preparing to be reviewed next day by the two Emperors- the Russian and the Austrian. Nikolai rides to Borís' camp to receive the letters and money sent from the Rostóv family. Nikolai, Borís and Borís' German friend Berg are drinking wine and talking about recent events. Prince Andrew stops by to see Borís. Nikolai, who does not know Andrew and who has become quite puffed up by his recent battle experience, speaks demeaningly of staff officers. While not backing down, Prince Andrew brushes off Nikolai's rudeness diplomatically, reminding him of the upcoming battle with the French which now ought to be the focus of their attention.

Quote from the chapter:

Bolkónski noticed the hussar's state of mind, and it amused him. With a slightly contemptuous smile, he said: "Yes, there are many stories now told about that affair!" "Yes, stories!" repeated Rostóv loudly, looking with eyes suddenly grown furious, now at Borís, now at Bolkónski. "Yes, many stories! But our stories are the stories of men who have been under the enemy's fire! Our stories have some weight, not like the stories of those fellows on the staff who get rewards without

doing anything!" "Of whom you imagine me to be one?" said Prince Andrew, with a quiet and particularly amiable smile. A strange feeling of exasperation and yet of respect for this man's self-possession mingled at that moment in Rostóv's soul. "I am not talking about you," he said, "I don't know you and, frankly, I don't want to. I am speaking of the staff in general." take part in a greater and more serious duel, and besides, Drubetskóy, who says he is an old friend of yours, is not at all to blame that my face has the misfortune to displease you. However," he added rising, "you know my name and where to find me, but don't forget that I do not regard either myself or you as having been at all insulted, and as a man older than you, my advice is to let the matter drop.

Book 3, Chapter 8

The Russian and Austrian Emperors review the allied army. It is a very inspiring and emotional experience for Nicholas and for all the troops. Nicholas no longer has any desire to challenge him to a duel.

Summary:

The day after Rostóv had been to see Borís, a review was held of the Austrian and Russian troops, both those freshly arrived from Russia and those who had been campaigning under Kutúzov. The two Emperors, the Russian with his heir the Tsarévich, and the Austrian with the Archduke, inspected the allied army of eighty thousand men. It was a very impressive display. The whole army was extended in three lines: the cavalry in front, behind it the artillery, and behind that again the infantry. When the Emperors arrived, it was an extremely emotional experience for all present. Rostóv is overcome with love of country and Tzar. He felt ready to go through fire and water, commit crime, die, or perform deeds of highest heroism. When Nicholas saw Prince Andrew among the gentlemen in the Emperor's suite, he no longer had any wish to challenge him to a duel. After the review, everyone thought that commanded by the Emperor their army could defeat anyone.

Quote from the chapter:

"My God, how happy I should be if he ordered me to leap into the fire this instant!" thought Rostóv. When the review was over, the newly arrived officers, and also Kutúzov's, collected in groups and began to talk about the awards, about the Austrians and their uniforms, about their lines, about Bonaparte, and how badly the latter would fare now, especially if the Essen corps arrived and Prussia took our side. But the talk in every group was chiefly about the Emperor Alexander. His every word and movement was described with ecstasy. They all had but one wish: to advance as soon as possible against the enemy under the Emperor's command. Commanded by the Emperor himself they could not fail to vanquish anyone, be it whom it might: so thought Rostóv and most of the officers after the review. All were then more confident of victory than the winning of two battles would have made them.

Book 3, Chapter 9

Borís goes to see Andrew to request his help in obtaining a staff job. At a council of war, contrary to the opinion of Kutúzov, it is decided that the time is right to attack Napoleon.

Summary:

Borís, always wanting to move up in the world, goes to see Prince Andrew, hoping Prince Andrew can help him move up from the infantry to a more promising position on Kutúzov's staff. Andrew says that there are already too many people on Kutúzov's staff. He tells Borís the fact is that now Kutúzov with his staff and all of us count for nothing. Everything is now centered round the Emperor. So, we will go to Dolgorúkov. Andrew promises to help Borís obtain a position on Dolgorúkov's staff. That same day a council of war had been held in which all the members of the Hofkriegsrath and both Emperors took part. At that council, contrary to the views of the old generals Kutúzov and Prince Schwartzenberg, it had been decided to advance immediately and give battle to Bonaparte. The majority opinion is that now is a very promising time to attack Napoleon. They feel that Russia now holds a decisive advantage over the French. Next day, the army began its campaign, and up to the very battle of Austerlitz, Borís was unable to see either Prince Andrew or Dolgorúkov again and remained for a while with the Ismáylov regiment.

Quote from the chapter:

But this is what we'll do: I have a good friend, an adjutant general and an excellent fellow, Prince Dolgorúkov; and though you may not know it, the fact is that now Kutúzov with his staff and all of us count for nothing. Everything is now centered round the Emperor. So we will go to Dolgorúkov; I have to go there anyhow and I have already spoken to him about you. We shall see whether he cannot attach you to himself or find a place for you somewhere nearer the sun." Prince Andrew always became specially keen when he had to guide a young man and help him to worldly success. Under cover of obtaining help of this kind for another, which from pride he would never accept for himself, he kept in touch with the circle which confers success and which attracted him. He very readily took up Borís' cause and went with him to Dolgorúkov.

Book 3, Chapter 10

The Russians are victorious in battle, capturing a French cavalry detachment. Nicholas' squadron is not sent into the fighting. After the battle, the troops are deeply moved with love for the Tsar and the Russian arms.

Summary:

On the day of the battle Nicholas' squadron was kept in reserve. This meant he would have no chance to distinguish himself in battle that day. Consequently, he spent that day in a dull and wretched mood. Eventually the men and officers who did fight began returning from the battle. They spoke of a brilliant victory and the capture of a whole detachment of French cavalry. When he sees the cossacks leading a captured French dragoon and his horse back from battle, Nicholas buys the horse, assuring its French owner he will take good care of it. Presently, the Emperor rides up and Nicholas and his compatriots are in awe. Nicholas was really in love with the Tsar and the glory of the Russian arms and the hope of future triumph. And he was not the only man to experience that feeling during those memorable days preceding the battle of Austerlitz, nearly all the soldiers experienced these emotions. However and ironically given the mood of the troops, merely seeing a bloody and wounded Russian soldier seems to upset the Emperor, who is reminded of what a terrible thing war is.

Quote from the chapter:

Casually, while surveying the squadron, the Emperor's eyes met Rostóv's and rested on them for not more than two seconds. Whether or no the Emperor understood what was going on in Rostóv's soul (it seemed to Rostóv that he understood everything), at any rate his light-blue eyes gazed for about two seconds into Rostóv's face. A gentle, mild light poured from them. Then all at once he raised his eyebrows, abruptly touched his horse with his left foot, and galloped on. The younger Emperor could not restrain his wish to be present at the battle and, in spite of the remonstrances of his courtiers, at twelve o'clock left the third column with which he had been and galloped toward the vanguard. Before he came up with the hussars, several adjutants met him with news of the successful result of the action. This battle, which consisted in the capture of a French squadron, was represented as a brilliant victory over the French, and so the Emperor and the whole army, especially while the smoke hung over the battlefield, believed that the French had been defeated and were retreating against their will.

Book 3, Chapter 11

Mostly confident of victory in the upcoming battle, the Russian troops move towards Bonaparte's army. Russian spirits are high but, for his part, Kutozov expects the battle to be lost.

Summary:

In the days preceding the battle of Austerlitz, a great, excitedly bustling activity began in the Russian camp which lasted till the morning of the twentieth, when the memorable battle of Austerlitz was fought. Optimism reigned throughout the Russian army, many believing Napoleon was afraid of a general battle. However, Prince Andrew and Kutozov are not so sanguine. They believe the Russian plan for the upcoming battle is wrong. They realize that Napoleon's position is not known by the Russians. But their opinion about the Russian battle plan is not heeded. That evening, Prince Andrew could not refrain from asking Kutúzov what he thought of tomorrow's battle. Kutúzov looked sternly at his adjutant and, after a pause, replied: "I think the battle will be lost, and so I told Count Tolstoy and asked him to tell the Emperor.

Quote from the chapter:

Just as in a clock, the result of the complicated motion of innumerable wheels and pulleys is merely a slow and regular movement of the hands which show the time, so the result of all the complicated human activities of 160,000 Russians and French- all their passions, desires, remorse, humiliations, sufferings, outbursts of pride, fear, and enthusiasm- was only the loss of the battle of Austerlitz, the so-called battle of the three Emperors- that is to say, a slow movement of the hand on the dial of human history.

Book 3, Chapter 12

That evening there is a council of war to go over assignments, but little discussion of the wisdom of the plan. Kutozov falls asleep during the meeting.

Summary:

A council of war is held to go over the dispositions for tomorrow's battle. Prince Andrew, Kutozov, and others think the plan bad, but their minority view is not seriously considered. It is

too late to change the battle plans, and the majority expect the outcome to be a major defeat for Napoleon. It takes an hour to read through everyone's assignments. Kutozov falls asleep during the meeting. After midnight the meeting is adjourned do everyone can get some sleep before the battle. Prince Andrew wonders if he will die in the battle, or if perhaps he will be a hero.

Quote from the chapter:

The council of war, at which Prince Andrew had not been able to express his opinion as he had hoped to, left on him a vague and uneasy impression. Whether Dolgorúkov and Weyrother, or Kutúzov, Langeron, and the others who did not approve of the plan of attack, were right—he did not know. "But was it really not possible for Kutúzov to state his views plainly to the Emperor? Is it possible that on account of court and personal considerations tens of thousands of lives, and my life, my life," he thought, "must be risked?" "Yes, it is very likely that I shall be killed tomorrow," he thought. And suddenly, at this thought of death, a whole series of most distant, most intimate, memories rose in his imagination: he remembered his last parting from his father and his wife; he remembered the days when he first loved her. He thought of her pregnancy and felt sorry for her and for himself, and in a nervously emotional and softened mood he went out of the hut in which he was billeted with Nesvítski and began to walk up and down before it.

Book 3, Chapter 13

On skirmishing duty at night, Nicholas and others hear cheering French troops in the near distance. Yet, a mistaken belief persists on the Russian staff that Napoleon is six miles away.

Summary:

A nearly dozing Nicholas rides skirmishing duty in front of Bagratión's detachment, his mind drifting between memories of home and dreams of heroism before the Emperor. Sounds of troops can be heard not far off. Prince Bagratión and Prince Dolgorúkov with their adjutants rode up to witness the curious phenomenon of the lights and shouts in the enemy's camp. Nicholas volunteers to Bagratión to ride up for a closer look. Nicholas is fired upon by French sentries, so rides back. Prince Bagratión and Prince Dolgorúkov speculate as to whether Napoleon has withdrawn his main troops and merely left a picket at the front. Nicholas requests and is granted permission to be with the first troops to attack in the morning. Meanwhile Napoleon, who unbeknownst to the Russians has not withdrawn his troops, exhorts his men to fight bravely the next morning, at which time Napoleon hopes to fall on the exposed Russian flank.

Quote from the chapter:

Rostóv, still looking round toward the fires and the shouts, rode with the sergeant to meet some mounted men who were riding along the line. One was on a white horse. Prince Bagratión and Prince Dolgorúkov with their adjutants had come to witness the curious phenomenon of the lights and shouts in the enemy's camp. Rostóv rode up to Bagratión, reported to him, and then joined the adjutants listening to what the generals were saying. One was on a white horse. Prince Bagratión and Prince Dolgorúkov with their adjutants had come to witness the curious phenomenon of the lights and shouts in the enemy's camp. "Believe me," said Prince Dolgorúkov, addressing Bagratión, "it is nothing but a trick! He has retreated and ordered the rearguard to kindle fires and make a noise to deceive us." "Hardly," said Bagratión. "I saw them this evening on that knoll; if they had retreated they would have withdrawn from that too.... Officer!" said Bagratión to Rostóv, "are the enemy's skirmishers still there?"

Book 3, Chapter 14

Napoleon watches as the Russians implement their misbegotten battle plan, quite unaware Napoleon is so nearby. Napoleon awaits the perfect moment to attack.

Summary:

Early in the morning the Russian troops, with Austrian guides, began to move. The monotonous tramp of thousands of feet resounded. The Russian columns moved forward, unable to see in the dense fog either the place they were leaving or that to which they were going. These troop movements were delayed and confused. “Why have we stopped?”, they asked, as groups of Russian soldiers blocked one another's progress. The commander's dissatisfaction with this muddle soon spread to the men, and all this disorder was blamed on the stupid Germans. They thought Napoleon was six miles away, but he was nearby and watching their confusion, waiting for the right moment to fall on the exposed Russian flank. Scattered shooting became more frequent. Then, when the moment was right, Napoleon signaled for his troops to fall upon the Russian flank.

Quote from the chapter:

(Napoleon) gazed silently at the hills which seemed to rise out of the sea of mist and on which the Russian troops were moving in the distance, and he listened to the sounds of firing in the valley. Not a single muscle of his face—which in those days was still thin—moved. His gleaming eyes were fixed intently on one spot. His predictions were being justified. Part of the Russian force had already descended into the valley toward the ponds and lakes and part were leaving these Pratzen Heights which he intended to attack and regarded as the key to the position. He saw over the mist that in a hollow between two hills near the village of Pratzen, the Russian columns, their bayonets glittering, were moving continuously in one direction toward the valley and disappearing one after another into the mist. From information he had received the evening before, from the sound of wheels and footsteps heard by the outposts during the night, by the disorderly movement of the Russian columns, and from all indications, he saw clearly that the allies believed him to be far away in front of them, and that the columns moving near Pratzen constituted the center of the Russian army, and that that center was already sufficiently weakened to be successfully attacked. But still he did not begin the engagement.

Book 3, Chapter 15

On the day of the battle, Kutúzov leads his men cautiously towards the French, whose proximity is still unknown. The Emperor orders Kutúzov to move forward more quickly. Kutúzov obeys.

Summary:

At 8:00 AM, Kutúzov is leading a Russian column down into the valley. He pauses briefly in the village of Pratzen. As they wait, Prince Andrew, who is riding in Kutúzov's immense suite, feels destined to be the hero of the day. Andrew fantasizes various battle scenarios in which he rises to glory. Meanwhile, the more experienced Kutúzov is being cautious. He sends Prince Andrew ahead to check for French sharpshooters and to order a Russian division to pause and wait for him

outside the village. The Russians still have not realized how near they are to Napoleon's army. Kutozov is advancing slowly, not trusting the reports that the French are six miles distant, but the Emperor comes upon them and condescendingly orders Kutozov forward without delay. Kutúzov plainly disagrees, but he obeys the Emperor's order.

Quote from the chapter:

"I am waiting, Your Majesty," answered Kutúzov, bending forward respectfully. The Emperor, frowning slightly, bent his ear forward as if he had not quite heard. "Waiting, Your Majesty," repeated Kutúzov. (Prince Andrew noted that Kutúzov's upper lip twitched unnaturally as he said the word "waiting.") "Not all the columns have formed up yet, Your Majesty." The Tsar heard but obviously did not like the reply; he shrugged his rather round shoulders and glanced at Novosíltsev who was near him, as if complaining of Kutúzov. "You know, Michael Ilariónovich, we are not on the Empress' Field where a parade does not begin till all the troops are assembled," said the Tsar with another glance at the Emperor Francis, as if inviting him if not to join in at least to listen to what he was saying. But the Emperor Francis continued to look about him and did not listen. "That is just why I do not begin, sire," said Kutúzov in a resounding voice, apparently to preclude the possibility of not being heard, and again something in his face twitched—"That is just why I do not begin, sire, because we are not on parade and not on the Empress' Field," said he clearly and distinctly.

Book 3, Chapter 16

The unsuspecting Russians walk right into a column of advancing French troops. The men panic and run. Andrew is shot trying to lead a counterattack.

Summary:

The Russians are continuing to advance under Kutúzov's lead. They believe the French are about a mile and a half off, and actually can see some French troops at that distance through their spyglass. Then, suddenly, they see the approaching French troops right in front of them. The Russian troops panic and begin to run off, pursued by the firing French troops. Confused and ever-increasing crowds of men are running back to where five minutes before the troops had passed the Emperors. All is in great confusion. Kutozov is shot. Men are running everywhere. Andrew, showing courage, picks up the Russian standard and begins to lead a countercharge. Some Russian troops follow Andrew. But Prince Andrew is struck in the head and falls wounded to the ground. No longer able to observe the fighting, his mind slips into a detached, other-worldly contemplation of the blue sky above.

Quote from the chapter:

"Look, look!" said this adjutant, looking not at the troops in the distance, but down the hill before him. "It's the French!" The two generals and the adjutant took hold of the field glass, trying to snatch it from one another. The expression on all their faces suddenly changed to one of horror. The French were supposed to be a mile and a half away, but had suddenly and unexpectedly appeared just in front of us. "It's the enemy?... No!... Yes, see it is!... for certain.... But how is that?" said different voices. With the naked eye Prince Andrew saw below them to the right, not more than five hundred paces from where Kutúzov was standing, a dense French column coming up to meet the Ápsherons. "Here it is! The decisive moment has arrived. My turn has come," thought Prince Andrew, and striking his horse he rode up to Kutúzov. "The Ápsherons must be stopped, your excellency," cried he. But at that very instant a cloud of smoke spread all round,

firing was heard quite close at hand, and a voice of naïve terror barely two steps from Prince Andrew shouted, "Brothers! All's lost!" And at this as if at a command, everyone began to run.

Book 3, Chapter 17

To stall for time, Bagratión sends Nicolai on a fool's errand to deliver a message to the commander in chief. Bagratión does this only to avert responsibility from himself, even though it could easily cost Rostóv's life.

Summary:

At nine o'clock, Bagratión does not wish to begin the attack on the right flank. In order to stall for time, he proposes sending a messenger to the commander in chief. Bagratión knows that the distance between the two flanks was more than six miles, so even if the messenger were not killed (which he very likely would be), he would not be able to get back before evening. Bagratión does this for no other reason than to avoid being personally blamed for not beginning the attack away from himself. Rostóv is selected to deliver the message. Nicolai is very happy. All of his wishes were being fulfilled that morning: there was to be a general engagement in which he was taking part, he was orderly to the bravest general, and he was going with a message to Kutúzov, perhaps even to the sovereign himself. Nicolai rides through the battle lines as firing grows louder and more frequent, rising to a steady roar. He sees troops moving everywhere , but cannot understand what is happening. At one point, he is nearly caught in the middle of a cavalry attack, but he manages to get away. The battle intensifies. He happens to see Borís and Berg, but has not yet found Kutúzov. He sees many wounded soldiers leaving the field. Still not having found the commander in chief, he sees that French cannon and French troops have reached the Pratzen Heights, just where he had been ordered to look for the commander in chief. He could not, did not wish to, believe what he was seeing.

Quote from the chapter:

On our right flank commanded by Bagratión, at nine o'clock the battle had not yet begun. Not wishing to agree to Dolgorúkov's demand to commence the action, and wishing to avert responsibility from himself, Prince Bagratión proposed to Dolgorúkov to send to inquire of the commander in chief. Bagratión knew that as the distance between the two flanks was more than six miles, even if the messenger were not killed (which he very likely would be), and found the commander in chief (which would be very difficult), he would not be able to get back before evening. Bagratión cast his large, expressionless, sleepy eyes round his suite, and the boyish face Rostóv, breathless with excitement and hope, was the first to catch his eye. He sent him.

Book 3, Chapter 18

Rostóv reaches the village of Pratzen. He finds only disorganized crowds of troops jostling about and still being fired upon. Nicholas continues searching, once spotting the Emperor but not approaching to help him. The battle is lost.

Summary:

By the time Nicholas reaches Pratzen it's clear the battle is lost. The French have taken the Heights and are firing upon the Russian troops. The officers have fled Pratzen, and the message Nicholas was sent to deliver is now completely irrelevant. Nicholas continues to search for Kutúzov. He hears rumors that Kutúzov or the Emperor have been wounded or killed. Someone says the commanders have gone to Hosjeradek, so Nicholas goes there. He sees from ten to fifteen dead and wounded lay on each couple of acres along the way. The wounded made distressing screams and groans. The French see Rostóv moving and fire a few shots at him, and he hears the balls whiz by. Hosjeradek is a bit more orderly, since it is beyond the range of the French guns. At one point, he spots the Emperor apparently needing some assistance, but even though he has dreamed of the chance to help the Emperor, it does not seem the thing to do now. The Russians positions are greatly disordered everywhere. They have been soundly beaten that day. The French are receiving almost no return fire from the Russians. A group of men attempting to cross the Augesd dam scramble onto the ice, which breaks up drowning some of them.

Quote from the chapter:

Before five in the evening the battle had been lost at all points. More than a hundred cannon were already in the hands of the French. Przebyszéwski and his corps had laid down their arms. Other columns after losing half their men were retreating in disorderly confused masses. The remains of Langeron's and Dokhtúrov's mingled forces were crowding around the dams and banks of the ponds near the village of Augesd. After five o'clock it was only at the Augesd Dam that a hot cannonade (delivered by the French alone) was still to be heard from numerous batteries ranged on the slopes of the Pratzen Heights, directed at our retreating forces.

Book 3, Chapter 19

Andrew lays on the battlefield until evening, bleeding, in pain, and often unconscious. Napoleon notices a slight movement and has him sent to hospital. Andrew once admired Napoleon, but now he sees him for the petty tyrant he is.

Summary:

In the evening, Andrew is still laying upon the Pratzen Heights battlefield were he fell earlier with the flagstaff in his hand. He is quite badly wounded, has been bleeding profusely and unconsciously moaning. Toward evening he begins to come around for a brief period. He does not know how long his unconsciousness has lasted, but now that he is awake he becomes aware of the terrible burning pain in his head. He wishes again for that lofty awareness of the sky he had earlier in the day. Just then he hears Napoleon approaching. Napoleon has come to look over the dead and wounded Russians who are scattered about the battlefield. When he finds Russian officers still alive, Napoleon compliments them on their valor. Napoleon sees Andrew, thinks he is dead, but compliments his valor. Andrew is conscious enough to be aware of Napoleon's presence, but too weak to speak. He is only able to move slightly. Realizing Andrew is alive, Napoleon includes him with those men being sent to hospital. Formerly, Andrew was a great admirerer of Napoleon. But seeing him now with his empty platitudes for the wounded, and contrasting this to the vision Andrew had had of the limitless skies, Andrew realizes what a petty insignificant visage Napoleon represents. Andrew is carried away for medical attention, but the pain of being moved causes him to drift in and out of consciousness. He thinks of his family, and Mary's religious faith, and is sometime delirious The doctor does not expect Andrew to survive.

Quote from the chapter:

Prince Andrew understood that this was said of him and that it was Napoleon who said it. He heard the speaker addressed as Sire. But he heard the words as he might have heard the buzzing of a fly. Not only did they not interest him, but he took no notice of them and at once forgot them. His head was burning, he felt himself bleeding to death, and he saw above him the remote, lofty, and everlasting sky. He knew it was Napoleon—his hero—but at that moment Napoleon seemed to him such a small, insignificant creature compared with what was passing now between himself and that lofty infinite sky with the clouds flying over it. At that moment it meant nothing to him who might be standing over him, or what was said of him; he was only glad that people were standing near him and only wished that they would help him and bring him back to life, which seemed to him so beautiful now that he had today learned to understand it so differently. He collected all his strength, to stir and utter a sound. He feebly moved his leg and uttered a weak, sickly groan which aroused his own pity. "Ah! He is alive," said Napoleon. "Lift this young man up and carry him to the dressing station."

Book 4, Chapter 1

Nicholas and Denísov obtain a leave and visit the Rostóvs. Nicholas is told he shouldn't feel bound to Sónya by his juvenile promise.

Summary:

Early in 1806, Nicholas returns home on leave, accompanied by his friend Denísov. Seeing Nicholas, everyone is completely overcome by emotion. There are many kisses and tears of joy in the loving family. Denísov is also warmly welcomed. In the morning, arising late, Natásha takes the first opportunity to tell Nicholas that she and Sónya don't think Nicholas should feel bound to marry Sónya. The two are still very much in love, but Sónya says I shall love him always, but let him be free. Thinking it over, Nicholas agrees. A little later Tolstoy mentions that the old countess had been dreading a love affair between Nicholas and Sónya as it might hinder Nicholas from making a brilliant match.

Quote from the chapter:

Natásha suddenly flushed. "Why, you remember before you went away?... Well, she says you are to forget all that.... She says: 'I shall love him always, but let him be free.' Isn't that lovely and noble! Yes, very noble? Isn't it?" asked Natásha, so seriously and excitedly that it was evident that what she was now saying she had talked of before, with tears. Rostóv became thoughtful. "I never go back on my word," he said. "Besides, Sónya is so charming that only a fool would renounce such happiness." "No, no!" cried Natásha, "she and I have already talked it over. We knew you'd say so. But it won't do, because you see, if you say that—if you consider yourself bound by your promise—it will seem as if she had not meant it seriously. It makes it as if you were marrying her because you must, and that wouldn't do at all."

Book 4, Chapter 2

Count Rostóv plans a large banquet to honor Bagratión. Nicholas lives the life of a young gentleman. Hélène and Dólokhov are rumored to be lovers.

Summary:

Still in Moscow on leave, Nicholas gains prominence in fashionable circles. His father goes yet deeper into debt to make this lifestyle possible for his son. Nicholas and Sónya are drifting apart. The elder Count is very busy arranging a large, lavish honorary dinner for Prince Bagratión at the English Club, which will also be quite costly to the father. He is spending borrowed money to do this. It seems the elder Rostóv will spare no expense on Bagratión's fete. As usual, the old Count lives far beyond his means to make a good impression in society. The city is concentrating on Bagratión because the news of the Russian defeat at the battle of Austerlitz was so very hard to accept. To compensate, everyone preferred to act as if Bagratión had been the victorious hero of the day. The old Count plans to invite Pierre and Hélène to the dinner, but learns that Pierre's new wife Hélène is rumored to be having an affair with Dólokhov. Also, Andrew is presumed dead, he not having been found after Austerlitz.

Quote from the chapter:

But after a while, just as a jury comes out of its room, the bigwigs who guided the club's opinion reappeared, and everybody began speaking clearly and definitely. Reasons were found for the incredible, unheard-of, and impossible event of a Russian defeat, everything became clear, and in all corners of Moscow the same things began to be said. These reasons were the treachery of the Austrians, a defective commissariat, the treachery of the Pole Przebyszéwski and of the Frenchman Langeron, Kutúzov's incapacity, and (it was whispered) the youth and inexperience of the sovereign, who had trusted worthless and insignificant people. But the army, the Russian army, everyone declared, was extraordinary and had achieved miracles of valor. The soldiers, officers, and generals were heroes. But the hero of heroes was Prince Bagratión, distinguished by his Schön Grabern affair and by the retreat from Austerlitz, where he alone had withdrawn his column unbroken and had all day beaten back an enemy force twice as numerous as his own.

Book 4, Chapter 3

The large, lavish banquet at the English Club in honor of Prince Bagratión and the attendees are described.

Summary:

The dinner in the English Club in honor of Prince Bagratión takes place, with about 300 guests in attendance. The program is mainly toasts and other homage's to Bagratión. He is given a commemorative silver tray engraved with verse. There are patriotic songs, and other music and singing. The meal is excellent. They drank to various dignitaries, to the committee, to all the club members and to all the club guests, and finally to Count Ilyá Rostóv separately, as the organizer of the banquet. At that toast, the count took out his handkerchief and, covering his face, wept outright.

Quote from the chapter:

Most of those present were elderly, respected men with broad, self-confident faces, fat fingers, and resolute gestures and voices. This class of guests and members sat in certain habitual places and met in certain habitual groups. A minority of those present were casual guests—chiefly young men, among whom were Denísov, Rostóv, and Dólokhov—who was now again an officer in the Semënov regiment.

Book 4, Chapter 4

A minor discourtesy at the banquet causes Pierre, who has heard rumors of the affair between Hélène and Dólokhov, to suddenly challenge Dólokhov to a duel.

Summary:

At the banquet, Pierre is seated with Dólokhov and Nicholas Rostóv. Pierre is sullen and distracted. The rumors of Dólokhov's affair with Hélène have reached Pierre, although Pierre at first finds it hard to believe. Meditating silently about these rumors during the banquet, Pierre feels something terrible and monstrous, like a hatred for Dólokhov, rising in his soul. Meanwhile, Nicholas and Dólokhov banter flippantly. But when Dólokhov grabs a leaflet being handed to Pierre, his anger suddenly erupts and he challenges Dólokhov to a duel. Despite entreaties from friends, neither Pierre nor Dólokhov will back down. The duel is scheduled for the next morning, and, with dueling pistols in hand, the two face off for mortal combat the next morning in an isolated snowy field.

Quote from the chapter:

"You...! you... scoundrel! I challenge you!" he ejaculated, and, pushing back his chair, he rose from the table. At the very instant he did this and uttered those words, Pierre felt that the question of his wife's guilt which had been tormenting him the whole day was finally and indubitably answered in the affirmative.

Book 4, Chapter 5

Pierre shoots Dólokhov in the duel and immediately regrets it.

Summary:

Although he had never before fired a pistol, Pierre shoots first in the duel and Dólokhov falls to the ground, bleeding. Dólokhov is seriously wounded, but not killed. Horrified and sobbing at what he has done, Pierre runs toward the wounded Dólokhov. But Dólokhov is still conscious, and still has the right to fire his pistol at Pierre. Pierre is told to return to his position. Although urged to do so even by Denisov, (who was Dolokhov's second), Pierre does not try to protect himself by standing sideways. Dólokhov, still on the ground, raises his pistol and fires at Pierre. His shot misses Pierre and the duel is over. Nicholas takes the wounded Dólokhov from the field. Dólokhov's first thought is of how his death will kill his dear, aged mother. He sends Nicholas to prepare her. Rostóv went, and to his great surprise learned that Dólokhov the brawler, Dólokhov the bully, lived in Moscow with an old mother and a hunchback sister, and was the most affectionate of sons and brothers.

Quote from the chapter:

"Sideways! Cover yourself with your pistol!" ejaculated Nesvítski. "Cover yourself!" even Denísov cried to his adversary. Pierre, with a gentle smile of pity and remorse, his arms and legs helplessly spread out, stood with his broad chest directly facing Dólokhov and looked sorrowfully at him. Denísov, Rostóv, and Nesvítski closed their eyes. At the same instant they heard a report and Dólokhov's angry cry. "Missed!" shouted Dólokhov, and he lay helplessly, face downwards on the snow. Pierre clutched his temples, and turning round went into the forest, trampling

through the deep snow, and muttering incoherent words: "Folly... folly! Death... lies..." he repeated, puckering his face.

Book 4, Chapter 6

Thinking he has killed Dólokhov, Pierre wonders how he has reached this point. He regrets marrying Hélène, she criticizes him, and they separate.

Summary:

The night after the duel Pierre did not go to his bedroom but, as he often did, remained in his father's room. There he ruminates about the duel and his marriage to Hélène. He thinks Dólokhov may be dead and he asks himself how this ever could have happened. Pierre realizes he was wrong to marry Hélène, who he never loved. He was attracted by her beauty and manner, but he realizes he should never have married her. He thinks Hélène is a depraved woman who must have welcomed Dólokhov's affections. He decides to separate permanently from Hélène. Then Hélène comes into the room and begins to berate Pierre. She says Dólokhov was not her lover, but that Dólokhov is in every way a better man than Pierre. Pierre mutters that he wants to separate from her. Hélène says this is ok with her, but that she wants a fortune in settlement. Overcome with anger, Pierre grabs a marble slab and lurches towards Hélène. Pierre screams "get out"! Hélène runs out of the room. A week later Pierre gave his wife full power to control all his estates in Great Russia, which formed the larger part of his property, and left for Petersburg alone.

Quote from the chapter:

Pierre wished to say something, looked at her with eyes whose strange expression she did not understand, and lay down again. He was suffering physically at that moment, there was a weight on his chest and he could not breathe. He knew that he must do something to put an end to this suffering, but what he wanted to do was too terrible. "We had better separate," he muttered in a broken voice. "Separate? Very well, but only if you give me a fortune," said Hélène. "Separate! That's a thing to frighten me with!" Pierre leaped up from the sofa and rushed staggering toward her. "I'll kill you!" he shouted, and seizing the marble top of a table with a strength he had never before felt, he made a step toward her brandishing the slab. Hélène's face became terrible, she shrieked and sprang aside. His father's nature showed itself in Pierre. He felt the fascination and delight of frenzy. He flung down the slab, broke it, and swooping down on her with outstretched hands shouted, "Get out!" in such a terrible voice that the whole house heard it with horror. God knows what he would have done at that moment had Hélène not fled from the room.

Book 4, Chapter 7

Prince Andrew has not been found and is presumed dead, his father and sister are very upset, but they do not tell his wife Lise.

Summary:

Two months have elapsed since the news of the battle of Austerlitz and the loss of Prince Andrew had reached Bald Hills, and in spite of the letters sent through the embassy and all the searches made, his body had not been found nor was he on the list of prisoners. What was worst of all for

his family was the fact that there was still a possibility of his having been picked up on the battlefield by the people of the place and that he might now be lying, recovering or dying, alone among strangers and unable to send news of himself. Kutúzov informs the old prince that Andrew was not found either among the dead or the wounded after the battle. The old prince assumes the worst. He makes up his mind that Prince Andrew is dead. The old prince is crushed, and his health begins to decline. He walks less, eats less, sleeps less, and becomes weaker every day. Princess Mary still has hope. She prays for her brother and awaits news of his return. They don't tell Lise the bad news, not wanting to upset her as the baby was due in a few days.

Quote from the chapter:

"Has anything come from Andrew?" she asked. "No, you know it's too soon for news. But my father is anxious and I feel afraid." "So there's nothing?" "Nothing," answered Princess Mary, looking firmly with her radiant eyes at her sister-in-law. She had determined not to tell her and persuaded her father to hide the terrible news from her till after her confinement, which was expected within a few days. Princess Mary and the old prince each bore and hid their grief in their own way. The old prince would not cherish any hope: he made up his mind that Prince Andrew had been killed, and though he sent an official to Austria to seek for traces of his son, he ordered a monument from Moscow which he intended to erect in his own garden to his memory, and he told everybody that his son had been killed. He tried not to change his former way of life, but his strength failed him. He walked less, ate less, slept less, and became weaker every day. Princess Mary hoped. She prayed for her brother as living and was always awaiting news of his return.

Book 4, Chapter 8

Lise goes into labor. Andrew unexpectedly returns to Bald Hills.

Summary:

At Bald Hills, Lise goes into labor before the doctor sent for from Moscow has arrived. There is only an old nurse and midwife there to care for Lise. Just as this is happening Prince Andrew, who many thought dead, unexpectedly arrives at the house.

Quote from the chapter:

"It's Andrew!" thought Princess Mary. "No it can't be, that would be too extraordinary," and at the very moment she thought this, the face and figure of Prince Andrew, in a fur cloak the deep collar of which covered with snow, appeared on the landing where the footman stood with the candle. Yes, it was he, pale, thin, with a changed and strangely softened but agitated expression on his face. He came up the stairs and embraced his sister. "You did not get my letter?" he asked

Book 4, Chapter 9

The baby is born. Lise dies and is buried three days later.

Summary:

Prince Andrew is permitted to go into the room to be with Lise for a few minutes. Then Andrew is sent out of the room to wait. Within minutes, while Andrew waits outside the room, the baby is

born, and the mother dies. Andrew goes to see his father who he has not seen since returning. Andrew finds his father distraught and sobbing over Lise's death. Three days later the Princess Lise was buried, and Prince Andrew went up the steps to where the coffin stood, to give her the farewell kiss. The old man too came up and kissed the waxen little hands that lay quietly crossed one on the other on her breast. To both Andrew and his father, the face of Lise laying in her coffin seemed to say: "Ah, what have you done to me, and why?"

Quote from the chapter:

"My darling!" he said—a word he had never used to her before. "God is merciful...." She looked at him inquiringly and with childlike reproach. "I expected help from you and I get none, none from you either!" said her eyes. She was not surprised at his having come; she did not realize that he had come. His coming had nothing to do with her sufferings or with their relief. The pangs began again and Mary Bogdánovna advised Prince Andrew to leave the room.

Book 4, Chapter 10

While recovering from the duel, Dólokhov befriends Nicholas and visits the Rostóv's frequently to be near Sónya.

Summary:

Dólokhov recovers from his gunshot wound, and Rostóv becomes very friendly with him during his convalescence. Dólokhov's mother speaks frequently to Nicholas and complains to Nicholas of how unfairly people treat her son. Nicholas comes to admire Dólokhov more and more. Dólokhov says he is well aware that many people dislike him, but he doesn't care a straw about anyone other than those he loves. Nicholas introduces Dólokhov into his household, and Dólokhov begins to show interest in Sónya. The very preceptive Natásha forms a profound dislike for Dólokhov, who she sees as odd and calculating. Natásha tells Nicholas that she can tell that Dólokhov has fallen in love with Sónya. Dólokhov begins to spend more and more time at the Rostóv house to be around Sónya.

Quote from the chapter:

Among the young men introduced by Rostov one of the first was Dolokhov, whom everyone in the house liked except Natasha. She almost quarreled with her brother about him. She insisted that he was a bad man, and that in the duel with Bezukhov, Pierre was right and Dolokhov wrong, and further that he was disagreeable and unnatural. There's nothing for me to understand, cried out with resolute self-will, he is wicked and heartless. There now, I like your Denisov though he is a rake and all that, still I like him; so you see I do understand. I don't know how to put it... with this one everything is calculated, and I don't like that.

Book 4, Chapter 11

Dólokhov proposes to Sónya but is refused. Nicholas speaks with Sónya to make sure she understands he isn't definitely committed to marrying her.

Summary:

Nicholas returns to the Rostóv house where a farewell party is to take place. Nicholas notices that people seen upset, and learns that Dólokhov has earlier proposed to Sónya and been rejected. Nicholas is concerned that Sónya may be passing up Dólokhov on his account. Sónya told Dólokhov that she loves another. Dólokhov appears to be a brilliant and advantageous match for Sónya. Natásha, for her part, tells Nicholas she feels sure Sónya is not destined to marry Nicholas. When Nicholas and Sónya are able to speak privately, Nicholas tells Sónya that although he loves Sónya, he is not commited to marry her. Sónya says she loves Nicholas as a brother and always will.

Quote from the chapter:

As soon as (Nicholas) entered he noticed and felt the tension of the amorous air in the house, and also noticed a curious embarrassment among some of those present. Sónya, Dólokhov, and the old countess were especially disturbed, and to a lesser degree Natásha. Nicholas understood that something must have happened between Sónya and Dólokhov before dinner

Book 4, Chapter 12

The dancing instructor's ball is very enjoyable. Denísov dances very well with Natásha, and remains by her side after the dance.

Summary:

The young people attend a ball given by Iogel, the dance teacher. There were many pretty girls at the ball and the Rostóv girls were among the prettiest. Everyone is in good spirits. Proud of Dólokhov's marriage proposal, her refusal, and her explanation with Nicholas, Sónya was radiant. Natásha, the best dancer there, was even happier and felt she loved everyone in the room. Denísov notices how pretty she is. Later, at Nicholas' urging, Natásha and Denísov dance the Polish mazurka. Denísov and Natásha dance brilliantly. After that dance, Denísov sat down by Natásha and did not leave her for the rest of the evening.

Quote from the chapter:

Natásha no less proud of her first long dress and of being at a real ball was even happier. They were both dressed in white muslin with pink ribbons. Natásha fell in love the very moment she entered the ballroom. She was not in love with anyone in particular, but with everyone. Whatever person she happened to look at she was in love with for that moment. "Oh, how delightful it is!" she kept saying, running up to Sónya. Nicholas and Denísov were walking up and down, looking with kindly patronage at the dancers. "How sweet she is—she will be a weal beauty!" said Denísov. "Who?" "Countess Natásha," answered Denísov. "And how she dances! What gwace!" he said again after a pause. "Who are you talking about?" "About your sister," ejaculated Denísov testily. Rostóv smiled.

Book 4, Chapter 13

Nicholas joins a card game with Dólokhov and begins to lose a great deal of money.

Summary:

Dólokhov invites Nicholas to a dinner at the English hotel, where he finds Dólokhov and about 20 others gambling at cards. Dólokhov encourages Nicholas to join the game, and Nicholas begins losing money steadily. Nicholas continues to play and lose, even though there have been hints and rumors that Dólokhov might cheat at cards. Prompted by Dólokhov, Nicholas loses more and more. Nicholas loses all the money his father has given him for the next six months. Hoping to win it back, Nicholas continues gambling and goes deeper and deeper in debt. He loses more than he can pay.

Quote from the chapter:

"Or are you afraid to play with me?" Dólokhov now asked as if guessing Rostóv's thought. Beneath his smile Rostóv saw in him the mood he had shown at the club dinner and at other times, when as if tired of everyday life he had felt a need to escape from it by some strange, and usually cruel, action. Rostóv felt ill at ease. He tried, but failed, to find some joke with which to reply to Dólokhov's words. But before he had thought of anything, Dólokhov, looking straight in his face, said slowly and deliberately so that everyone could hear: "Do you remember we had a talk about cards... 'He's a fool who trusts to luck, one should make certain,' and I want to try."

Book 4, Chapter 14

Nicholas' losses from the card game continue to rise, until at last Dólokhov brings the game to an end.

Summary:

The card game continues and Nicholas continues to lose. Dólokhov plans to continue until Nicholas loses 43,000 roubles, 43 being the sum of Dólokhov and Sónya's ages. Nicholas has already lost far more than he can afford to pay, yet he continues playing, feeling as if he is in Dólokhov's power. He thinks about how happy he was at home, and how miserable now. He thinks of suicide. When Nicholas's losses pass 43,000, Dólokhov suddenly ends the game. He seemingly allows Nicholas to win back 21 roubles, so as to bring the debt down to an even 43,000. Dólokhov then asks to be paid. When asked to accept an IOU, Dólokhov brings up Sónya's love for Nicholas. Nicholas says "My cousin has nothing to do with this and it's not necessary to mention her!" Dólokhov asks "Then when am I to have it?" Nicholas promises to pay Dólokhov the next day, although he has no idea how he can do that.

Quote from the chapter:

Such a little while ago I came to this table with the thought of winning a hundred rubles to buy that casket for Mamma's name day and then going home. I was so happy, so free, so lighthearted! And I did not realize how happy I was! When did that end and when did this new, terrible state of things begin? What marked the change? I sat all the time in this same place at this table, chose and placed cards, and watched those broad-boned agile hands in the same way. When did it happen and what has happened? I am well and strong and still the same and in the same place. No, it can't be! Surely it will all end in nothing!" He was flushed and bathed in perspiration, though the room was not hot. His face was terrible and piteous to see, especially from its helpless efforts to seem calm. The score against him reached the fateful sum of forty-three thousand.

Book 4, Chapter 15

Nicholas, in agony over how much money he has lost in the card game, returns home. As he listens to Natásha sing, his suffering briefly abates.

Summary:

After losing the 43,000 roubles to Dólokhov, Nicholas returns home to find his family and Denísov happily relaxing and socializing. It is a happy domestic scene. Denísov, Sónya and Natásha gather around the clavichord to sing. Nicholas looks to them as if something bad has happened, but he does not tell them the bad news. Nicholas asks if his father is home, he is not. Nicholas is suffering inwardly greatly, and it seems weird to him that the others are able to enjoy life. It is as if Nicholas is experiencing a private hell of his own creation. But, hearing Natásha sing, he experiences a fleeting moment of transcendence, something that was finest in Rostóv's soul! And this something was apart from everything else in the world and above everything in the world. "What were losses, and Dólokhov, and words of honor? he asks himself.

Quote from the chapter:

Nicholas began pacing up and down the room. "Why do they want to make her sing? How can she sing? There's nothing to be happy about!" thought he. Sónya struck the first chord of the prelude. "My God, I'm a ruined and dishonored man! A bullet through my brain is the only thing left me—not singing!" his thoughts ran on. "Go away? But where to? It's one—let them sing!" He continued to pace the room, looking gloomily at Denísov and the girls and avoiding their eyes.

Book 4, Chapter 16

Count Rostóv, very short of funds himself, covers Nicholas' gambling debt without any scolding. Denísov unexpectedly proposes to Natásha.

Summary:

The momentary pleasure Nicholas experienced listening to Natásha's singing passes quickly, and soon his father entered the house. Nicholas requests the 43,000 roubles from his father. Nicholas, at first feigns a carefree demeanor, smiling as though this were no big deal, even though Nicholas knows his father does not have the money. The father is taken aback, but he neither denies the request nor criticizes his son. He will try to get the money. As his father leaves the room, Nicholas breaks down and falls to his knees, sobbing. Kissing his father's hand, he begs forgiveness. Meanwhile, elsewhere in the house, Denísov has unexpectedly asked Natásha to marry him. Natásha goes to her mother for advice. The mother thinks Natásha is too young to marry and Natásha does not want to marry Denísov. So politely but with some humor, the mother helps Natásha quickly refuse Denísov's sincere but inept proposal of marriage. A few days later, Nicholas sends Dólokhov the whole amount before leaving to rejoin his regiment in Poland.

Quote from the chapter:

"Yes, yes," he muttered, "it will be difficult, I fear, difficult to raise... happens to everybody! Yes, who has not done it?" And with a furtive glance at his son's face, the count went out of the room.... Nicholas had been prepared for resistance, but had not at all expected this. "Papa! Papa!" he called after him, sobbing, "forgive me!" And seizing his father's hand, he pressed it to his lips and burst into tears. While father and son were having their explanation, the mother and daughter were having one not less important. Natásha came running to her mother, quite excited. "Mamma!... Mamma!... He has made me..." "Made what?" "Made, made me an offer, Mamma!

Mamma!" she exclaimed. The countess did not believe her ears. Denísov had proposed. To whom? To this chit of a girl, Natásha, who not so long ago was playing with dolls and who was still having lessons. "Don't, Natásha! What nonsense!" she said, hoping it was a joke.

Book 5, Chapter 1

Delayed at a roadside station en route to Petersburg, Pierre listlessly wonders what is the purpose of life. Then, a strange old man enters the station.

Summary:

After his angry meeting with Hélène, Pierre left for Petersburg. En route, Pierre is delayed at the Torzhók post station, either because there were no horses or the postmaster would not supply them. Pierre anxiously ponders the meaning of life, and that we all must die. Not only was he indifferent as to whether he got to Petersburg earlier or later, or whether he secured accommodation at this station, but compared to the thoughts that now occupied him it was a matter of indifference to him whether he remained there for a few hours or for the rest of his life. While lost in these existential musings, a wrinkled old man enters the room followed by an old servant. After a while, the mysterious old man looks directly at Pierre. Pierre felt confused and wished to avoid that look, but the stranger's bright old eyes attracted him irresistibly.

Quote from the chapter:

"Is this good or bad?" Pierre asked himself. "It is good for me, bad for another traveler, and for himself it's unavoidable, because he needs money for food; the man said an officer had once given him a thrashing for letting a private traveler have the courier horses. But the officer thrashed him because he had to get on as quickly as possible. And I," continued Pierre, "shot Dólokhov because I considered myself injured, and Louis XVI was executed because they considered him a criminal, and a year later they executed those who executed him—also for some reason. What is bad? What is good? What should one love and what hate? What does one live for? And what am I? What is life, and what is death? What power governs all?"

Book 5, Chapter 2

The old man in the station talks with Pierre about freemasonry and about the need to purify one's inner self.

Summary:

The stranger in the train station knows who Pierre is and begins speaking to him. He knows about Pierre's recent misfortunes, such as the duel. Pierre, noticing that the old man is a Freemason, tells him I am afraid my way of looking at the world is so opposed to yours that we shall not understand one another." The Freemason tells Pierre he is unhappy because he does not know God and because Pierre has lived a life of riotous orgies and debauchery, leading a profligate life, receiving everything from society and giving nothing in return. Although a possessor of wealth,

Pierre has done little to help others physically and morally? No! You have profited by the toil of your slaves to lead a profligate life. This, says the old man, is why Pierre is unhappy. Although in the past Pierre has been an unbeliever who ridiculed Freemasonry, the old man's words move Pierre. Then the old man begins to leave, but Pierre, in a childlike, hesitating voice says “I thank you. I agree with all you have said. Pierre wants to learn to live better, and the old man, who we learn is a very well-known Freemason, gives Pierre the name of someone in St. Petersberg who can help him learn more about the Masons.

Quote from the chapter:

For a long while after he had gone, Pierre did not go to bed or order horses but paced up and down the room, pondering over his vicious past, and with a rapturous sense of beginning anew pictured to himself the blissful, irreproachable, virtuous future that seemed to him so easy. It seemed to him that he had been vicious only because he had somehow forgotten how good it is to be virtuous. Not a trace of his former doubts remained in his soul. He firmly believed in the possibility of the brotherhood of men united in the aim of supporting one another in the path of virtue, and that is how Freemasonry presented itself to him.

Book 5, Chapter 3

In Petersburg, Pierre accepts an invitation to join the Masons. He begins the elaborate and mysterious masonic initiation ceremony.

Summary:

In St. Petersburg, Pierre is invited to join the Freemasons. He is taken to an elaborate initiation ceremony. The ceremony takes place in darkened rooms, and he is led through the long, complicated ceremony by current Freemasons, some of whom Pierre recognizes from prior acquaintance. Pierre is asked why he wants to join and told of the goals of the society. Pierre is a very willing inductee to the Freemasons. He thinks it will improve his life immensely. He was determined to submit to all that would be required of him. He has renounced his atheism. Pierre feels that his life is already changed. He had already long been feeling in himself that refreshing source of blessedness which now flooded his heart with glad emotion.

Quote from the chapter:

The first and chief object of our Order, the foundation on which it rests and which no human power can destroy, is the preservation and handing on to posterity of a certain important mystery... which has come down to us from the remotest ages, even from the first man- a mystery on which perhaps the fate of mankind depends. ... not everyone can hope to attain it quickly. Hence we have a secondary aim, that of preparing our members as much as possible to reform their hearts, to purify and enlighten their minds, by means handed on to us by tradition from those who have striven to attain this mystery, and thereby to render them capable of receiving it.

Book 5, Chapter 4

The Freemason induction ceremony, continued.

Summary:

The elaborate Freemason induction ceremony continues. It is full of theatrical flourishes such as swords, a coffin, a skull, a spirit lamp, so many details in fact that the Freemasons conducting the ceremony sometimes aren't sure themselves what comes next. Pierre is asked more questions, told more about the Freemasons, read some of their statutes, etc. Pierre happily goes along with it all, glad to be joining. When the induction finished and, getting up, everyone embraced and kissed Pierre, who with tears of joy in his eyes, looked round him, Pierre was unsure how to answer the many congratulations and greetings from acquaintances that met him on all sides. When the meeting was at an end and he returned to his home, Pierre felt as if he had returned from a long journey on which he had spent dozens of years, had become completely changed, and had quite left behind his former habits and way of life.

Quote from the chapter:

The meeting was at an end, and on reaching home Pierre felt as if he had returned from a long journey on which he had spent dozens of years, had become completely changed, and had quite left behind his former habits and way of life.

Book 5, Chapter 5

Vasíli very intrusively attempts to get Pierre to take Hélène back, but Pierre sends him away.

Summary:

The next day Pierre is at home reading a Masonic book and joyfully planning a new life for himself. He's heard maybe he should leave town since the Emperor found out about the duel. Pierre thinks of going to his estates in the south to focus on doing good for the serfs. Just then, Prince Vasíli suddenly enters the room uninvited. Vasíli immediately begins to try to cajole and pressure Pierre into reconciling with his daughter Hélène. This intrusion naturally makes Pierre very angry. He tries to speak, but Vasíli keeps cutting him off. Also, Pierre hesitates to show anger since the Masonic statutes say to "be kindly and courteous," to everyone. Finally, Pierre simply tells Vasíli to leave. Vasíli protests, but Pierre is firm, and so Vasíli has no choice but to leave as Pierre is requesting.

Quote from the chapter:

Pierre tried several times to speak, but, on one hand, Prince Vasíli did not let him and, on the other, Pierre himself feared to begin to speak in the tone of decided refusal and disagreement in which he had firmly resolved to answer his father-in-law. Moreover, the words of the Masonic statutes, "be kindly and courteous," recurred to him. He blinked, went red, got up and sat down again, struggling with himself to do what was for him the most difficult thing in life—to say an unpleasant thing to a man's face, to say what the other, whoever he might be, did not expect. He was so used to submitting to Prince Vasíli's tone of careless self-assurance that he felt he would be unable to withstand it now, but he also felt that on what he said now his future depended—whether he would follow the same old road, or that new path so attractively shown him by the Masons, on which he firmly believed he would be reborn to a new life.

Book 5, Chapter 6

After the duel, Anna Pávlovna's soirées continue as before. Pierre is less favorably looked upon. Hélène and Borís are well regarded.

Summary:

No one was directly punished for the duel between Pierre and Dólokhov , but the duel along with his separation from his wife really lowered Pierre's status in polite society. Pierre's usefulness to a lot of people was over, so they made Pierre an outsider. Russian high society rolled on without him. Anna Pávlovna has another of her soirées. Talk of the war and international politics, and alliances figured largely in the conversation. As usual, Anna continued to invite a few new and interesting persons to each soirée, to make the evening more interesting. One such special guest at one of these soirées was Borís, who was adroitly rising in importance and who as an aid de camp knew a lot about what was happening at the time. Borís lives up to expectations, makes a good impression on everyone, speaking well, and interesting everyone with his conversation. Later, Hélène privately asks Borís to come see her.

Quote from the chapter:

The greatest attention of all to Borís' narrative was shown by Hélène. She asked him several questions about his journey and seemed greatly interested in the state of the Prussian army. As soon as he had finished she turned to him with her usual smile. "You absolutely must come and see me," she said in a tone that implied that, for certain considerations he could not know of, this was absolutely necessary.

Book 5, Chapter 7

Hélène initiates a relationship with Borís

Summary:

Anna Pávlovna's soirée continues. There is more talk of politics and the war. Hippolyte's nonsensical inept joking once again falls flat with the group. As people are leaving, Hélène reminds Borís that she wants him to come and see her on Tuesday. But on Tuesday evening, when he attends Hélène's splendid salon as requested, it's not clear to Borís why he was invited. There were other guests and the countess talked little to him. But, as he was leaving, Hélène unexpectedly invites him to dinner the next day. In this way, during that stay in Petersburg, Borís becomes an intimate in the countess' house.

Quote from the chapter:

But on Tuesday evening, having come to Hélène's splendid salon, Borís received no clear explanation of why it had been necessary for him to come. There were other guests and the countess talked little to him, and only as he kissed her hand on taking leave said unexpectedly and in a whisper, with a strangely unsmiling face: "Come to dinner tomorrow... in the evening. You must come.... Come!" During that stay in Petersburg, Borís became an intimate in the countess' house.

Book 5, Chapter 8

Bald Hills after Lise's death; the baby contracts a high fever.

Summary:

The war was flaming up and nearing the Russian frontier. Everywhere one heard curses on Bonaparte, “the enemy of mankind.” Militiamen and recruits were being enrolled in the villages, and from the seat of war came contradictory news, false as usual and therefore variously interpreted. The Old Prince, who is weak due to the recent family problems, is very busy with his recruitment duties. The Old Prince gives Andrew a nearby estate. Prince Andrew, thoroughly disillusioned with war, stays home and helps his father. Lise's baby, now motherless, is being cared for by Princess Mary, Madame B, and several nurses. The baby is a delight to them all. The baby contracts a very high fever. The Old Prince wants Andrew to travel to a certain town to expedite the arrival of additional men and provisions needed by the army. But Andrew vows not to leave until the baby is better. Princess Mary and Andrew, horrified of losing the baby, are at his side constantly. Andrew and Mary argue a little about the best treatment for the baby. The baby is burning up with fever.

Quote from the chapter:

Well?” he asked. “Still the same. Wait, for heaven’s sake. Karl Iványich always says that sleep is more important than anything,” whispered Princess Mary with a sigh. Prince Andrew went up to the child and felt him. He was burning hot. “Confound you and your Karl Iványich!” He took the glass with the drops and again went up to the cot. “Andrew, don’t!” said Princess Mary.

Book 5, Chapter 9

The Russian Army is in great difficulty. Andrew's baby gets well.

Summary:

Bilíbin's writes Prince Andrew a long letter from army headquarters. Things are very bleak indeed. The Prussians have again betrayed the Russians. The Prussian generals lay down their arms. The war has reached the frontiers of Russia. Kámenski is put in command, but as no one has confidence in him, he passes command to Count Buxhöwden. There is no food for the troops. Bennigsen fights a losing battle of Pultúsk and is forced to retreat. Nonetheless, Bennigsen claims it was a victory. Hoping to be made commander in chief himself, Bennigsen ceases cooperating with Buxhöwden. Bennigsen's antics contribute to Buxhöwden's army nearly being captured by the French. Bennigsen is appointed commander in chief. Just then, the starving Orthodox Russian soldiers revolt and begin to maraude the countryside for food. The Emperor authorizes deadly force to quell the marauders, more or less obliging half the army to shoot the other half. So, things at the front are bad, indeed. Andrew's reading of Bilíbin's letter is interrupted by a noise from the nursery. Fearing the baby may have died, Andrew instead finds that the baby has survived the fever and is recovering.

Quote from the chapter:

We civilians, as you know, have a very bad way of deciding whether a battle was won or lost. Those who retreat after a battle have lost it is what we say; and according to that it is we who lost the battle of Pultúsk. In short, we retreat after the battle but send a courier to Petersburg with news of a victory, and General Bennigsen, hoping to receive from Petersburg the post of commander in chief as a reward for his victory, does not give up the command of the army to General Buxhöwden. During this interregnum we begin a very original and interesting series of

maneuvers. Our aim is no longer, as it should be, to avoid or attack the enemy, but solely to avoid General Buxhöwden who by right of seniority should be our chief. So energetically do we pursue this aim that after crossing an unfordable river we burn the bridges to separate ourselves from our enemy, who at the moment is not Bonaparte but Buxhöwden.

Book 5, Chapter 10

Pierre attempts to free his serfs and to take other steps to improve their lives, but his stewards thwart his attempts.

Summary:

Soon after joining the Masonic Brotherhood, Pierre went to Kiev where he had many estates. Once there, he instructed all of his stewards to go much easier on the serfs, who Pierre meant to free as soon as possible. The stewards feigned support for Pierre's new ideas, although in reality they opposed Pierre's ideas. The chief steward, for example, said Pierre's plans to help the serfs must be delayed because it would cost too much money. With his huge inheritance, Pierre had also acquired a lot of financial obligations. Pierre really felt far poorer now than before he inherited the money. He met daily with the chief steward, but Pierre didn't have a good head for business and the steward was able to subtly thwart his efforts to make life better for the serfs. Behind Pierre's back, the stewards also placed added burdens on the serfs. And, despite being a Freemason, Pierre still sought out parties and female liaisons as in the past. The stewards also played off Pierre's desire to see himself as a great social reformer. They made Pierre think he was accomplishing great things for the serfs, like building schools and churches, while in reality life for his serfs became more difficult than ever.

Quote from the chapter:

The chief steward, who considered the young count's attempts almost insane—unprofitable to himself, to the count, and to the serfs—made some concessions. Continuing to represent the liberation of the serfs as impracticable, he arranged for the erection of large buildings—schools, hospitals, and asylums—on all the estates before the master arrived. Everywhere preparations were made not for ceremonious welcomes (which he knew Pierre would not like), but for just such gratefully religious ones, with offerings of icons and the bread and salt of hospitality, as, according to his understanding of his master, would touch and delude him.

Book 5, Chapter 11

Pierre visits Prince Andrew. Andrew's new philosophy is that it is better to live for oneself and those one loves, rather than to seek glory.

Summary:

Returning from his tour in the happiest state of mind, Pierre stops to visit Prince Andrew. Andrew is making improvements to his new estate, where he plans to live. Pierre hasn't seen Andrew for two years. Andrew looks older, worn down and tired. Their conversation does not flow well at first. But, when Andrew brings up Pierre's duel, the conversation opens up. Pierre expresses his newly acquired Masonic understanding that what he did was wrong. Andrew disagrees, saying

"To kill a vicious dog is a very good thing really.". Andrew explains how his outlook on life has changed after Austerlitz. Maybe living for others will work for Pierre, he says, but Andrew feels that he has ruined his life seeking glory, or the approval of others. Now Andrew plans to live only for himself and those he loves. Andrew thinks the serfs are better off left alone. He says he will not rejoin the army. Later, the two men plan to visit Bald Hills.

Quote from the chapter:

"Bad! Bad!" exclaimed Pierre. "We all know what is bad for ourselves." "Yes, we know that, but the harm I am conscious of in myself is something I cannot inflict on others," said Prince Andrew, growing more and more animated and evidently wishing to express his new outlook to Pierre. He spoke in French. "I only know two very real evils in life: remorse and illness. The only good is the absence of those evils. To live for myself avoiding those two evils is my whole philosophy now." "And love of one's neighbor, and self-sacrifice?" began Pierre. "No, I can't agree with you! To live only so as not to do evil and not to have to repent is not enough. I lived like that, I lived for myself and ruined my life

Book 5, Chapter 12

Pierre tries to share Freemasonry with Andrew.

Summary:

On the ride to Bald Hills, Pierre was thinking that Prince Andrew was not happy, had gone astray, did not see the true light, and that he, Pierre, ought to aid, enlighten, and raise him. At length, Pierre says to Andrew Do you know what saved me? Freemasonry! Pierre tries to tell Andrew all about Freemasonry, to explain how Freemasonry has helped him and how it could help Andrew too. He says they teach the best, the eternal, aspects of humanity. Its the teachings of Christianity freed from the bonds of State and Church, a teaching of equality, brotherhood, and love. Andrew is mostly silent but listens to Pierre respectfully. As they are crossing a river by ferry, for a minute Andrew thinks that Pierre is correct. Maybe Freemasonry is the answer. But, then too Andrew remembers the pain he suffered from losing Lise, and that seems more real to him. As they disembark from the ferry, it seems that Pierre has not converted Andrew to Freemasonry, but he has planted a seed which may bear fruit later.

Quote from the chapter:

(Andrew) sighed, and glanced with a radiant, childlike, tender look at Pierre's face, flushed and rapturous, but yet shy before his superior friend. "Yes, if it only were so!" said Prince Andrew. "However, it is time to get on," he added, and, stepping off the raft, he looked up at the sky to which Pierre had pointed, and for the first time since Austerlitz saw that high, everlasting sky he had seen while lying on that battlefield; and something that had long been slumbering, something that was best within him, suddenly awoke, joyful and youthful, in his soul. It vanished as soon as he returned to the customary conditions of his life, but he knew that this feeling which he did not know how to develop existed within him. His meeting with Pierre formed an epoch in Prince Andrew's life. Though outwardly he continued to live in the same old way, inwardly he began a new life.

Book 5, Chapter 13

Andrew and Pierre encounter with several religious pilgrims who are visiting Princess Mary.

Summary:

When Prince Andrew and Pierre arrive at Bald Hills, they find a couple of religious pilgrims are just then visiting Princess Mary. Mary can receive these pilgrims only when the Old Prince is away. Andrew chats humorously with the pilgrims, asking them flippant questions about their pilgrimages, the holy sights and relics they have seen, and the like. The pilgrims tell of the strange things they have seen. Princess Mary tells Pierre and Andrew to stop their teasing. Pierre says all of this religious hokum is a fraud on the people. He and Andrew poke fun at the old lady's miraculous tales. She becomes upset, and faced with this sinful talk she begins to hurry away. But Andrew and Pierre apologize, and in Pierre's face there was such a look of sincere penitence, and Prince Andrew glanced so meekly now at her and now at Pierre, that the pilgrim lady is gradually calmed and stays.

Quote from the chapter:

"In Kolyázin, master, a wonderful blessing has been revealed." "What is it? Some new relics?" asked Prince Andrew. "Andrew, do leave off," said Princess Mary. "Don't tell him, Pelagéya." "No... why not, my dear, why shouldn't I? I like him. He is kind, he is one of God's chosen, he's a benefactor, he once gave me ten rubles, I remember. When I was in Kiev, Crazy Cyril says to me (he's one of God's own and goes barefoot summer and winter), he says, 'Why are you not going to the right place? Go to Kolyázin where a wonder-working icon of the Holy Mother of God has been revealed.' On hearing those words I said good-by to the holy folk and went."

Book 5, Chapter 14

Pierre has a very pleasant visit at Bald Hills.

Summary:

Pierre has a very nice visit at Bald Hills. He likes Andrew's family and is well liked by them. Mary is impressed by how kindly Pierre listens to the tales of the pilgrims. She hopes Pierre can encourage her brother to travel, as the quiet regular life at Bald Hills is very bad for Andrew. The old prince was in a good temper and very gracious to Pierre. The old prince liked Pierre very much, although he found some of Pierre's ideas on the end of war nonsensical. Being at Bald Hills made Pierre realize the strength and charm of his friendship with Prince Andrew and indeed his whole household. And everyone in the household, from the old prince, to the baby and the staff liked Pierre very much.

Quote from the chapter:

Pierre was maintaining that a time would come when there would be no more wars. The old prince disputed it chaffingly, but without getting angry. "Drain the blood from men's veins and put in water instead, then there will be no more war! Old women's nonsense—old women's nonsense!" he repeated, but still he patted Pierre affectionately on the shoulder, and then went up to the table where Prince Andrew, evidently not wishing to join in the conversation, was looking over the papers his father had brought from town. The old prince went up to him and began to talk business. "The marshal, a Count Rostóv, hasn't sent half his contingent. He came to town and wanted to invite me to dinner—I gave him a pretty dinner!... And there, look at this.... Well, my boy," the old prince went on, addressing his son and patting Pierre on the shoulder. "A fine

fellow—your friend—I like him! He stirs me up. Another says clever things and one doesn't care to listen, but this one talks rubbish yet stirs an old fellow up. Well, go! Get along! Perhaps I'll come and sit with you at supper. We'll have another dispute. Make friends with my little fool, Princess Mary," he shouted after Pierre, through the door.

Book 5, Chapter 15

Nicholas returns to his regiment. His men are so hungry they are eating a toxic wild weed even though ordered not to.

Summary:

Being back with the regiment feels to Nicholas like a homecoming. He realizes how close is the bond that unites him to Denísov and the whole regiment. He feels as supported there as when living with his parents. And in many ways military life, with its well-defined rules and roles, is simple an carefree compared to civilian life. He wants to be a better soldier to make up for his gambling spree. He has formed a plan to repay his parents over the next five years. As previously, Nicholas bunks with Denísov, and Denísov's failed proposal to Natásha seems only to have made Denísov and Nicholas better friends. However, the regiment had a huge problem. They were not receiving provisions and the men were starving. They could not even confiscate food, as the local people had no food either. Driven by hunger, the soldiers began eating a toxic weed that made them very sick. They are ordered not to eat this weed, but the soldiers are so hungry they go on eating it.

Quote from the chapter:

Despite this destitution, the soldiers and officers went on living just as usual. Despite their pale swollen faces and tattered uniforms, the hussars formed line for roll call, kept things in order, groomed their horses, polished their arms, brought in straw from the thatched roofs in place of fodder, and sat down to dine round the caldrons from which they rose up hungry, joking about their nasty food and their hunger. As usual, in their spare time, they lit bonfires, steamed themselves before them naked; smoked, picked out and baked sprouting rotten potatoes, told and listened to stories of Potëmkin's and Suvórov's campaigns, or to legends of Alësha the Sly, or the priest's laborer Mikólka.

Book 5, Chapter 16

Denísov seizes provisions for his starving troops.

Summary:

Still in camp, Denislov's men continue to eat the toxic weed despite being ordered not to. One day, Denísov hears of some unescorted Russian provisions being transported nearby. Denísov takes a platoon and seizes several wagons of the provisions by force. He brings the food back to camp and distributes it to his starving men. The officers from whom he took the food are incensed and threaten disciplinary action. Denísov accuses the commissariat officers of corruption. Denislov's own command is willing to overlook the incident, but they send Denísov to the commissariat to apologize and to give them a receipt for the food he took. Denísov tries to resolve the matter in

this way, but the commissariat does not forgive him. They threaten him with court martial. Denísov scuffles with several of them. Returning to camp, Denísov acts defiant, but he is clearly worried. When he receives an insignificant wound in a skirmish, Denísov decides to go into hospital on medical leave, hoping this might help him avoid the consequences of having taken the provisions without permission.

Quote from the chapter:

"There now, Denísov has been worrying," said Rostóv, "and here are the provisions." "So they are!" said the officers. "Won't the soldiers be glad!" A little behind the hussars came Denísov, accompanied by two infantry officers with whom he was talking. Rostóv went to meet them. "I warn you, Captain," one of the officers, a short thin man, evidently very angry, was saying. "Haven't I told you I won't give them up?" replied Denísov. "You will answer for it, Captain. It is mutiny—seizing the transport of one's own army. Our men have had nothing to eat for two days." "And mine have had nothing for two weeks," said Denísov.

Book 5, Chapter 17

Rostóv goes to the military hospital to see Denísov.

Summary:

There was a brief armistice and Rostóv goes to the military hospital to visit Denísov, about whom he has been worried. Entering the hospital, Nicholas finds that conditions there are absolutely appalling. There is a horrible smell. Its infected with Typhus and lacks medical staff. Five doctors have already died of Typhus, with only one doctor remaining The men lie in horrid conditions, especially in the soldiers' ward. A man begs repeatedly for water, but no one attends him. When a man dies in his bed, no one even removes the corpse. No one knows if Denísov is there, or if he has died. In one room Nicholas finds a dead man in one of the beds who has been laying there for some time.

Quote from the chapter:

"No, it's impossible to do anything here," thought Rostóv, lowering his eyes, and he was going out, but became aware of an intense look fixed on him on his right, and he turned. Close to the corner, on an overcoat, sat an old, unshaven, gray-bearded soldier as thin as a skeleton, with a stern sallow face and eyes intently fixed on Rostóv. The man's neighbor on one side whispered something to him, pointing at Rostóv, who noticed that the old man wanted to speak to him. He drew nearer and saw that the old man had only one leg bent under him, the other had been amputated above the knee. His neighbor on the other side, who lay motionless some distance from him with his head thrown back, was a young soldier with a snub nose. His pale waxen face was still freckled and his eyes were rolled back. Rostóv looked at the young soldier and a cold chill ran down his back. "Why, this one seems..." he began, turning to the assistant. "And how we've been begging, your honor," said the old soldier, his jaw quivering. "He's been dead since morning. After all we're men, not dogs."

Book 5, Chapter 18

Denísov requests pardon from the Emperor.

Summary:

Going into the officers ward of the hospital, Nicholas meets Túshin, the artillery captain, who has lost an arm. Also in the ward he finds Denísov. Denísov is angry about being charged with robbery. He felt the commissariat officers were the real thieves. Rostóv noticed a new, sinister, hidden feeling showed itself in the expression of Denísov's face and the intonations of his voice. Denísov has written an angry, accusatory letter in response to his charges. His friends urge Denísov instead to be penitent and to apologize and to petition the Emperor for pardon. His friends have already written a pardon request for Denísov to sign and send to the Emperor. Denísov remains defiant until evening. But when Rostóv was leaving, Denísov signs the pardon request, saying "It seems it's no use knocking one's head against a wall!" Denísov gives the request to Rostóv for delivery to the Emperor.

Quote from the chapter:

"The auditor wrote out a petition for you," continued Túshin, "and you ought to sign it and ask this gentleman to take it. No doubt he" (indicating Rostóv) "has connections on the staff. You won't find a better opportunity." "Haven't I said I'm not going to gwovel?" Denísov interrupted him, went on reading his paper. Rostóv had not the courage to persuade Denísov, though he instinctively felt that the way advised by Túshin and the other officers was the safest, and though he would have been glad to be of service to Denísov. He knew his stubborn will and straightforward hasty temper.

Book 5, Chapter 19

Nicholas tries to deliver Denislov's request for a pardon.

Summary:

Returning to the regiment, Nicholas updates the commander on Denísov's situation. Then Rostóv rides to Tilsit with the letter to the Emperor. On the thirteenth of June the French and Russian Emperors were in Tilsit. Nicholas arrives there, where he meets Borís Drubetskóy. At that time, relations between France and Russia were friendly, and both French and Russian officers are present. Nicholas, like many Russian soldiers at that time, did not feel friendly towards the French, so Nicholas was uncomfortable finding Borís entertaining a group of French officers. But Nicholas explains his mission to Borís. Borís, who knows about these things, thinks the Emperor will not pardon Denísov. Borís recommends that the request should be given to the corps commander, rather than to the Emperor.

Quote from the chapter:

it was a matter of great importance, for a man who valued his success in the service, to be at Tilsit on the occasion of this interview between the two Emperors, and having succeeded in this, Borís felt that henceforth his position was fully assured. He had not only become known, but people had grown accustomed to him and accepted him. Twice he had executed commissions to the Emperor himself, so that the latter knew his face, and all those at court, far from cold-shouldering him as at first when they considered him a newcomer, would now have been surprised had he been absent.

Book 5, Chapter 20

The Emperor refuses Denislov's pardon request.

Summary:

Nicholas is upset that Borís has not been more helpful. So Nicholas, who still profoundly admires the Emperor, decides to hand in the petition himself. But Nicholas finds he will not be allowed to give the request to the Emperor. By luck, though, on the street Nicholas happens to run into a cavalry general he knows, and this general promises to personally deliver the request to the Emperor. Hardly had Rostóv handed him the letter and finished explaining Denísov's case, when the Emperor emerges. Rostóv sees the general talking for some time to the Emperor. The Emperor said a few words to the General and took a step toward his horse. Again the crowd of members of the suite and street gazers (among whom was Rostóv) moved nearer to the Emperor. Evidently wishing to be heard by all, the Emperor says "I cannot do it, General. I cannot, because the law is stronger than I," and he raised his foot to the stirrup. The general bowed his head respectfully, and the monarch rides off.

Quote from the chapter:

"What are you doing here, sir, in civilian dress?" asked a deep voice. It was a cavalry general who had obtained the Emperor's special favor during this campaign, and who had formerly commanded the division in which Rostóv was serving. Rostóv, in dismay, began justifying himself, but seeing the kindly, jocular face of the general, he took him aside and in an excited voice told him the whole affair, asking him to intercede for Denísov, whom the general knew. Having heard Rostóv to the end, the general shook his head gravely. "I'm sorry, sorry for that fine fellow. Give me the letter."

Book 5, Chapter 21

The Emperor and Napoleon exchange courtesies and awards.

Summary:

Having just declined Denislov's pardon request, the Emperor meets Napoleon on horseback in public. Rostóv kept his eyes on every movement of Alexander and Bonaparte. It struck him as a surprise that Alexander treated Bonaparte as an equal. Napoleon gives a Russian soldier an award for bravery. The Emperor will reciprocate with an award for a French soldier the next day. The Russian battalion mingles with the French Guards. Rostóv, watching the feast from a distance, has painful, terrible doubts. He remembers the stinking hospital, with arms and legs torn off. This is hard to square with seeing the self-satisfied Bonaparte being so respected by Alexander. Then why those severed arms and legs and those dead men? He thinks of a random soldier being honored while the good Denísov is punished and unpardoned. Nicholas is frightened by his misgivings. Finally, though, Nicholas drives away his doubts. If the Emperor pleases to recognize Bonaparte as Emperor and to conclude an alliance with him, it means that that is the right thing to do., Nicholas thinks.

Quote from the chapter:

The process in his mind went on tormenting him without reaching a conclusion. He feared to give way to his thoughts, yet could not get rid of them. Suddenly, on one of the officers' saying that it

was humiliating to look at the French, Rostóv began shouting with uncalled-for wrath, and therefore much to the surprise of the officers: "How can you judge what's best?" he cried, the blood suddenly rushing to his face. "How can you judge the Emperor's actions? What right have we to argue? We cannot comprehend either the Emperor's aims or his actions!"

Book 5, Chapter 22

In 1809, France and Russia were on friendly terms. Daily life for most people was uneffected by international politics.

Summary:

In 1808 and 1809, friendly relations between Russia and France continued. A Russian corps crossed the frontier to co-operate with Napoleon in his fight against Austria. The possibility of a marriage between Napoleon and one of Alexander's sisters was spoken of. Most people's daily lives went on as usual, not effected by the political relations between the two nations. (Note: In the Maude translation, there is a very short chapter consisting of only the two brief paragraphs summarized above. In the P&V translation, these two short paragraphs do not have their own chapter. Instead, there can be found on page 418, at the beginning of the next P&V chapter.)

Quote from the chapter:

In 1809 the intimacy between "the world's two arbiters," as Napoleon and Alexander were called, was such that when Napoleon declared war on Austria a Russian corps crossed the frontier to co-operate with our old enemy Bonaparte against our old ally the Emperor of Austria, and in court circles the possibility of marriage between Napoleon and one of Alexander's sisters was spoken of. But besides considerations of foreign policy, the attention of Russian society was at that time keenly directed on the internal changes that were being undertaken in all the departments of government.

Book 6, Chapter 1

For the next two years, Andrew lives quietly in the country.

Summary:

Prince Andrew was dividing his time between Bald Hills and his own nearby estate. A much more skilled manager than Pierre, Andrew easily effected many progressive changes on his estates, such as liberating and educating his serfs. He read a lot and kept up on home and foreign affairs. He kept busy with writing a critical survey of the recent campaigns, and with drawing up a army reform proposals. But he barely noticed the pleasant Spring of 1809. As to his personal life, Andrew's conclusion remained that it was not for him to begin anything anew—but that he must live a quiet life and not desiring anything more.

Quote from the chapter:

"Spring, love, happiness!" this oak seemed to say. "Are you not weary of that stupid, meaningless, constantly repeated fraud? Always the same and always a fraud? There is no spring, no sun, no happiness! Look at those cramped dead firs, ever the same, and at me too, sticking out

my broken and barked fingers just where they have grown, whether from my back or my sides: as they have grown so I stand, and I do not believe in your hopes and your lies." As he passed through the forest Prince Andrew turned several times to look at that oak, as if expecting something from it. Under the oak, too, were flowers and grass, but it stood among them scowling, rigid, misshapen, and grim as ever.

Book 6, Chapter 2

On a business trip, Andrew sees Natásha Rostóv and notices how happy she is.

Summary:

In May, Andrew needed to see Count Ilyá Rostóv on business. The ever gregarious and outgoing Count Rostóv insists Andrew stay at his house. At the Rostóv house at Otrádnoe, Andrew's attention is repeatedly drawn to the cheerful Natásha, who to Andrew seems very contented, bright and happy, as if in a completely different world from Andrew. In Andrew's soul there suddenly arose such an unexpected turmoil of youthful thoughts and hopes, contrary to the whole tenor of his life, that Andrew is unable to explain his condition to himself.

Quote from the chapter:

"For her I might as well not exist!" thought Prince Andrew while he listened to her voice, for some reason expecting yet fearing that she might say something about him. "There she is again! As if it were on purpose," thought he.

Book 6, Chapter 3

Prince Andrew reawakens from feeling that life was already over for him.

Summary:

Unexpectedly, as he drives home through a deep and very vibrant Spring forest, Andrew experiences a spiritual reawakening. He feels a deep sense of inner joy and renewal. The best moments of his life rise to his memory. Austerlitz with the lofty heavens, his wife's dead reproachful face, Pierre at the ferry, that girl thrilled by the beauty of the night ... all this rushed suddenly to his mind. Andrew realizes his life is not over at thirty-one. Pierre, and that young girl, everyone must know me, he thinks, so that my life may not be lived for myself alone while others live so apart from it, but so that it may be reflected in them all, and they and I may live in harmony!" Although it's not yet apparent to others, Prince Andrew internally has at some level decided to rejoin life. He makes plans to go again to Petersburg in the autumn.

Quote from the chapter:

"No, life is not over at thirty-one!" Prince Andrew suddenly decided finally and decisively. "It is not enough for me to know what I have in me—everyone must know it: Pierre, and that young girl who wanted to fly away into the sky, everyone must know me, so that my life may not be lived for myself alone while others live so apart from it, but so that it may be reflected in them all, and they and I may live in harmony!" On reaching home Prince Andrew decided to go to Petersburg that autumn and found all sorts of reasons for this decision. A whole series of sensible and logical

considerations showing it to be essential for him to go to Petersburg, and even to re-enter the service, kept springing up in his mind. He could not now understand how he could ever even have doubted the necessity of taking an active share in life, just as a month before he had not understood how the idea of leaving the quiet country could ever enter his head. It now seemed clear to him that all his experience of life must be senselessly wasted unless he applied it to some kind of work and again played an active part in life.

Book 6, Chapter 4

Prince Andrew submits his Army reform proposals.

Summary:

Prince Andrew arrived in Petersburg in August, 1809, a time when various governmental reforms were in the works, including proposals for abolishing court ranks, introducing examinations to qualify for the grades of Collegiate Assessor and State Councilor, and various other reforms intended to change government in Russia at all levels. Andrew brought with him to Petersburg his own reform proposals, which he submitted for review. Andrew, who never rejoined the army, gets a cold reception in Petersburg. Nonetheless, Andrew's written proposals will be sent to the Committee on Army Regulations for review, and Andrew is made a member of that same committee.

Quote from the chapter:

"I have endorsed a resolution on your memorandum and sent it to the committee. I do not approve of it," said Arakchéev, rising and taking a paper from his writing table. "Here!" and he handed it to Prince Andrew. Across the paper was scrawled in pencil, without capital letters, misspelled, and without punctuation: "Unsoundly constructed because resembles an imitation of the French military code and from the Articles of War needlessly deviating." "To what committee has the memorandum been referred?" inquired Prince Andrew. "To the Committee on Army Regulations, and I have recommended that your honor should be appointed a member,

Book 6, Chapter 5

Andrew gets caught up in the government reform movement, and meets its leader Speránski.

Summary:

In Petersburg, Andrew quickly becomes very interested in government reform, and in Secretary of State Speránski its chief promoter, so much so that specific questions of army regulations quickly fade in Andrew's mind. Everyone in Petersburg was very interested in Andrew. Liberals liked that he had freed his serfs. Conservatives liked that he was the Old Prince's son. People talked about him, were interested in him, and wanted to meet him. He interested feminine society as a distinguished and romantic newcomer. His old friends notice that Andrew had matured since they last saw him. At a social event, Andrew meets Speránski, the chief architect of the reform movement. Being kindred spirits, Andrew and Speránski hit if off at their first meeting.

Quote from the chapter:

From the irritation of the older men, the curiosity of the uninitiated, the reserve of the initiated, the hurry and preoccupation of everyone, and the innumerable committees and commissions of whose existence he learned every day, he felt that now, in 1809, here in Petersburg a vast civil conflict was in preparation, the commander in chief of which was a mysterious person he did not know, but who was supposed to be a man of genius—Speránski. And this movement of reconstruction of which Prince Andrew had a vague idea, and Speránski its chief promoter, began to interest him so keenly that the question of the army regulations quickly receded to a secondary place in his consciousness.

Book 6, Chapter 6

Diving deeper into government reform work, Andrew develops mixed feelings about Speránski.

Summary:

During the first weeks of his stay in Petersburg, Prince Andrew is so busy with his day-to-day activities, he has no time to think about his life. In time, Andrew gets to know Speránski better. Speránski strikes Andrew as his ideal of a perfectly rational and virtuous man. The fact that Speránski came from humble origins caused Prince Andrew to cherish his sentiment for him the more, and unconsciously to strengthen it. Speránski, either because he appreciated the other's capacity or because he considered it necessary to win him to his side, cultivates his relationship with Prince Andrew. Andrew admires Speránski tremendously. Still, something about Speránski bothers Andrew. With Speránski's help, Andrew is appointed chairman of a section of the Committee on Army Regulations for the revision of the laws. Andrew works on the section on the regulations dealing with personal rights.

Quote from the chapter:

Everything seemed so simple and clear in Speránski's exposition that Prince Andrew involuntarily agreed with him about everything. If he replied and argued, it was only because he wished to maintain his independence and not submit to Speránski's opinions entirely. Everything was right and everything was as it should be: only one thing disconcerted Prince Andrew. This was Speránski's cold, mirrorlike look, which did not allow one to penetrate to his soul, and his delicate white hands, which Prince Andrew involuntarily watched as one does watch the hands of those who possess power. This mirrorlike gaze and those delicate hands irritated Prince Andrew, he knew not why. He was unpleasantly struck, too, by the excessive contempt for others that he observed in Speránski, and by the diversity of lines of argument he used to support his opinions.

Book 6, Chapter 7

Pierre's Freemason life goes off track.

Summary:

In 1808, Pierre on returning to Petersburg finds himself in a leading position among the Petersburg Freemasons. He picks up more and more Freemason responsibilities. Doing so much work himself, Pierre notices that many of his fellows seem to lack commitment to the lodge and its ideas. Meanwhile, Pierre's personal life continues as before, with the same infatuations and

dissipations, dining and drinking, and very much living the bachelor life. Frustrated with how poorly his Freemason work seems to be going, toward the end of the year he goes abroad to be initiated into the higher secrets of the order. Upon his return, he delivers a critical speech to the group, telling them they all really need to shape up. At the end of the meeting the Grand Master reproves Pierre for his critical tone, and accuses him of being moved by strife. When Pierre sees that his ideas are not going to be accepted and put into effect, Pierre walks out before the meeting is over.

Quote from the chapter:

Pierre began to feel dissatisfied with what he was doing. Freemasonry, at any rate as he saw it here, sometimes seemed to him based merely on externals. He did not think of doubting Freemasonry itself, but suspected that Russian Masonry had taken a wrong path and deviated from its original principles. And so toward the end of the year he went abroad to be initiated into the higher secrets of the order.

Book 6, Chapter 8

Pierre changes course and reunites with Hélène.

Summary:

After his speech at the Freemason lodge fell flat, Pierre went home and sunk into depression. At the same time, his wife and several others began to beg him to take Hélène back. As depressed as he was, nothing mattered to him. He had lost both his desire to be free and his wish to punish his wife. At that point he might have taken her back, but really he felt too depressed to do anything. He went to Moscow to see Joseph Alexéevich, the well-known Freemason Pierre had first met that night in the train station. He tells Alexéevich his speech at the lodge and about the falling out it caused him with the lodge. After remaining silent for a good while, the saintly Alexéevich tells Pierre that to grow spiritually he needs to live humbly in the world and focus on becoming a better person himself. He suggests that Pierre begin to keep a diary. Pierre takes Alexéevich's advice to heart, begins his diary, and soon after allows Hélène to return.

Quote from the chapter:

(Joseph Alexéevich) Which is the principal aim of these three? Certainly self-reformation and self-purification. Only to this aim can we always strive independently of circumstances. But at the same time just this aim demands the greatest efforts of us; and so, led astray by pride, losing sight of this aim, we occupy ourselves either with the mystery which in our impurity we are unworthy to receive, or seek the reformation of the human race while ourselves setting an example of baseness and profligacy. Illuminism is not a pure doctrine, just because it is attracted by social activity and puffed up by pride.

Book 6, Chapter 9

Hélène's social standing rises, but Borís is always nearby.

Summary:

Hélène, as soon as she had settled in Petersburg with her husband, assumed a very prominent place in high society. She was visited by the members of the French embassy and by many belonging to that circle and noted for their intellect and polished manners. Her social reputation as a lovely and clever woman became so firmly established that she could say the emptiest and stupidest things and everybody would go into raptures over every word of hers and look for a profound meaning in it of which she herself had no conception. Pierre was quite indifferent to Hélène's new social status. He entered his wife's drawing room as one enters a theater, was acquainted with everybody and equally indifferent to them all. But Borís Drubetskóy, who had already achieved great success in the service, visited frequently, and this began to bother Pierre. It recalled to Pierre Hélène's former relationship with Dólokhov.

Quote from the chapter:

To be received in the Countess Bezúkhova's salon was regarded as a diploma of intellect. Young men read books before attending Hélène's evenings, to have something to say in her salon, and secretaries of the embassy, and even ambassadors, confided diplomatic secrets to her, so that in a way Hélène was a power. Pierre, who knew she was very stupid, sometimes attended, with a strange feeling of perplexity and fear, her evenings and dinner parties, where politics, poetry, and philosophy were discussed.

Book 6, Chapter 10

Pierre's diary entries, his internal struggles, and his efforts towards self-improvement.

Summary:

This chapter consists of five entries taken directly from Pierre's recently begun diary. Through it, the reader sees into Pierre's struggles at this time, and how Pierre is attempting to understand and pass through these struggles. In the diary, Pierre talks about the events of his days, and reflects on is feelings and how he might live better. We learn that Borís has joined the Freemasons with Pierre's help, but Pierre doubts his sincerity and in fact feels a deep hostility for Borís. He recounts several dreams and events suggesting to him that he should resume conjugal relations with his wife, who although she has been living again in his house, he has been living apart from. In the diary, Pierre also recounts several dreams he has had lately related to Joseph Alexéevich, which dreams generally seem to relate to a theme of regeneration. In general, in these five diary entries, Pierre reflects on problems he is experiencing in his daily life, and how he might overcome these problems.

Quote from the chapter:

It was Borís Drubetskóy who was admitted. I nominated him and was the Rhetor. A strange feeling agitated me all the time I was alone with him in the dark chamber. I caught myself harboring a feeling of hatred toward him which I vainly tried to overcome. That is why I should really like to save him from evil and lead him into the path of truth, but evil thoughts of him did not leave me. It seemed to me that his object in entering the Brotherhood was merely to be intimate and in favor with members of our lodge. ... I had no cause to doubt him, but he seemed to me insincere, and all the time I stood alone with him in the dark temple it seemed to me that he was smiling contemptuously at my words, and I wished really to stab his bare breast with the sword I held to it. I could not be eloquent, nor could I frankly mention my doubts to the Brothers and to the Grand Master. Great Architect of Nature, help me to find the true path out of the labyrinth of lies!

Book 6, Chapter 11

Véra's becomes engaged but there is a problem of her dowry.

Summary:

The Rostóvs' monetary affairs have not improved during the two years they had spent in the country. Their debts only increase every year. Realizing he has to have more income, the old count begins to look for a government post. Meanwhile, Berg proposes to Véra and is accepted. Her parents were initially reluctant to allow Véra to marry Berg, but they eventually approve of the match. This brought up the question of Véra's dowry. The old count did not himself know what he could afford, but clearly his resources were stretched very thin. One day, in a polite but very direct manner, Berg asks the old count what the dowry will be. The count tries to put him off and at first will not name a figure. Berg, though, says he cannot marry without knowing how much Véra's dowry will be. Next, the count offers Berg a note, (i.e. an IOU), for 80,000 rubles. Berg, however, says he would need at least 20,000 in cash and a note for the remaining 60,000. The count, ever wishing to appear magnanimous, says he will give Berg the offered note for 80,000 plus an additional 20,000 in cash. Berg is satisfied with this offer. But its not clear where the old count expects to find the 20,000 in cash.

Quote from the chapter:

Moreover, the Rostóvs' affairs were seriously embarrassed, as the suitor could not but know; and above all, Véra was twenty-four, had been taken out everywhere, and though she was certainly good-looking and sensible, no one up to now had proposed to her. So they gave their consent. "You see," said Berg to his comrade, whom he called "friend" only because he knew that everyone has friends, "you see, I have considered it all, and should not marry if I had not thought it all out or if it were in any way unsuitable. But on the contrary, my papa and mamma are now provided for—I have arranged that rent for them in the Baltic Provinces—and I can live in Petersburg on my pay, and with her fortune and my good management we can get along nicely. I am not marrying for money—I consider that dishonorable—but a wife should bring her share and a husband his. I have my position in the service, she has connections and some means.

Book 6, Chapter 12

Borís wants to find a wealthy heiress to marry, but nonetheless begins visiting the Rostóvs frequently, much to Hélène's displeasure.

Summary:

Natásha has turned sixteen. This is the year in which she and Borís had once dreamed of marrying. But since joining the Army four years ago, Borís has never visited the Rostóvs. Meanwhile, Borís has gained a brilliant position in society thanks to his intimacy with Countess Bezúkhova. Borís knew full well that he wanted to marry someone wealthy, which Natásha was not. He did not want to deceive Natásha or lead her on. But, at the same time, he found Natásha really attractive. Almost against his will, he began to visit the Rostóv house almost daily, and to spend whole days

there. He let off visiting Hélène. Hélène was not happy about this. She sent Borís chiding notes every day, and yet Borís continued spending his time at the Rostóvs.

Quote from the chapter:

After his first visit Borís said to himself that Natásha attracted him just as much as ever, but that he must not yield to that feeling, because to marry her, a girl almost without fortune, would mean ruin to his career, while to renew their former relations without intending to marry her would be dishonorable. Borís made up his mind to avoid meeting Natásha, but despite that resolution he called again a few days later and began calling often and spending whole days at the Rostóvs'. It seemed to him that he ought to have an explanation with Natásha and tell her that the old times must be forgotten, that in spite of everything... she could not be his wife, that he had no means, and they would never let her marry him. But he failed to do so and felt awkward about entering on such an explanation. From day to day he became more and more entangled. It seemed to her mother and Sónya that Natásha was in love with Borís as of old.

Book 6, Chapter 13

The Countess puts a halt to Borís' frequent visits.

Summary:

One evening, Natásha went in for her nightly conversation with her mother, and they talked about Borís. The Countess tells Natásha that Borís really seems to have fallen for her, but that "It won't do, my love! Not everyone will understand this friendship dating from your childish days, and to see him so intimate with you may injure you in the eyes of other young men who visit us, and above all it torments him for nothing. He may already have found a suitable and wealthy match, and now he's half crazy." Natásha protests, saying she thinks they ought to be able to keep seeing one another, even if they don't plan to marry. "What rubbish you're talking!" said the countess. Natásha, without missing a beat, then says something complementary about Prince Andrew. "You flirt with him too," said the countess, laughing. This conversation ends and Natásha goes off to bed. The next day the countess called Borís aside and had a talk with him, after which he ceased coming to the Rostóvs'.

Quote from the chapter:

Natásha was listening and considering. "Well, what then?" said she. "You have quite turned his head, and why? What do you want of him? You know you can't marry him." "Why not?" said Natásha, without changing her position. "Because he is young, because he is poor, because he is a relation... and because you yourself don't love him." "How do you know?" "I know. It is not right, darling!" "But if I want to..." said Natásha. "Leave off talking nonsense," said the countess. "But if I want to..." "Natásha, I am in earnest..."

Book 6, Chapter 14

Natásha prepares to attend her first grand ball.

Summary:

This is a chapter with little plot development. It describes Natásha and her family preparing to attend a fabulous New Year's Eve a ball and midnight supper for elite society. As one would imagine, Natásha's excitement on this special day is palpable, and no detail of the preparation can be overlooked. Several maids are helping with last minute adjustments to her gown and hair. All of the Rostóv's are elegantly attired. On the way to the ball, the Rostóv's stop to pick up an elderly maid of honor who Tolstoy tells us in spite of her age and plainness she had gone through the same process as the Rostóvs, but with less flurry. Then, at eleven o'clock, being careful of their coiffures and dresses, they all settled themselves in their carriages and drove off to the ball.

Quote from the chapter:

Natásha was going to her first grand ball. She had got up at eight that morning and had been in a fever of excitement and activity all day. All her powers since morning had been concentrated on ensuring that they all—she herself, Mamma, and Sónya—should be as well dressed as possible. Sónya and her mother put themselves entirely in her hands. The countess was to wear a claret-colored velvet dress, and the two girls white gauze over pink silk slips, with roses on their bodices and their hair dressed à la grecque. Everything essential had already been done; feet, hands, necks, and ears washed, perfumed, and powdered, as befits a ball; the openwork silk stockings and white satin shoes with ribbons were already on; the hairdressing was almost done. Sónya was finishing dressing and so was the countess, but Natásha, who had bustled about helping them all, was behindhand.

Book 6, Chapter 15

Natásha enters the grand ball.

Summary:

Natásha understood all that awaited her at the ball only when, after stepping over the red baize at the entrance, she entered the hall, took off her fur cloak, and, beside Sónya and in front of her mother, mounted the brightly illuminated stairs between the flowers. At first, everything blended into one brilliant procession. Natásha realized that several people who had noticed her liked her, and this observation helped to calm her. The hostess was pointing out to the Countess the most important people at the ball, such as Hélène, Anatole, Pierre, Prince Andrew, and other notable members of society. Natásha, pointing out Prince Andrew to her mother, says "You remember, he stayed a night with us at Otrádnoe." Of Prince Andrew, the hostess remarks "I can't bear him. He's too proud for anything. Takes after his father. And he's hand in glove with Speránski, writing some project or other.

Quote from the chapter:

Natásha looked joyfully at the familiar face of Pierre, "the buffoon," as Perónskaya had called him, and knew he was looking for them, and for her in particular. He had promised to be at the ball and introduce partners to her. But before he reached them Pierre stopped beside a very handsome, dark man of middle height, and in a white uniform, who stood by a window talking to a tall man wearing stars and a ribbon. Natásha at once recognized the shorter and younger man in the white uniform: it was Bolkónski, who seemed to her to have grown much younger, happier, and better-looking. "There's someone else we know—Bolkónski, do you see, Mamma?" said Natásha, pointing out Prince Andrew. "You remember, he stayed a night with us at Otrádnoe."

Book 6, Chapter 16

After the Emperor arrives at the grand ball, Natásha and Andrew dance.

Summary:

The Emperor arrives at the ball and presently the dancing begins. Hélène is the first asked to dance. Natásha frets that no one will ask her, but Pierre (who before the ball had promised to introduce dance partners to Natásha) approaches Prince Andrew and asks that he dance with Natásha, who obviously wishes to be dancing. Andrew does so. They dance a waltz. Both Andrew and Natásha dance wonderfully. Andrew had chosen Natásha because Pierre pointed her out to him and because she was the first pretty girl who caught his eye; but scarcely had he embraced that slender supple figure and felt her stirring so close to him and smiling so near him than the wine of her charm rose to his head, and he felt himself revived and rejuvenated when after leaving her he stood breathing deeply and watching the other dancers.

Quote from the chapter:

"I have long been waiting for you," that frightened happy little girl seemed to say by the smile that replaced the threatened tears, as she raised her hand to Prince Andrew's shoulder. They were the second couple to enter the circle. Prince Andrew was one of the best dancers of his day and Natásha danced exquisitely. Her little feet in their white satin dancing shoes did their work swiftly, lightly, and independently of herself, while her face beamed with ecstatic happiness.

Book 6, Chapter 17

Natásha and Andrew enjoy the ball, but Pierre is annoyed with Hélène's new social status.

Summary:

Natásha did not cease dancing all the evening, and barely noticed anything else going on at the ball. She dances again with Andrew. Watching her later, Andrew thinks "that girl is so charming and original, that she won't be dancing here a month before she will be married." For her part, Natásha was happier than she had ever been in her life. She had arrived at that soaring height of bliss when one becomes completely kind and good and does not believe in the possibility of evil, unhappiness, or sorrow. She was in a sort of heaven. Meanwhile, Pierre's experience was quite different. For the first time, Pierre felt humiliated by the exulted position his wife occupied in court circles. When Natásha notices that Pierre seems unhappy, she wonders how anyone could be dissatisfied with anything, especially such a great fellow like Pierre! In her joy, at that moment, in Natásha's mind the world seemed to only contain good, kind, and splendid people, and it seemed to her that everyone in the world ought to be happy.

Quote from the chapter:

When her partner left her Natásha ran across the room to choose two ladies for the figure. "If she goes to her cousin first and then to another lady, she will be my wife," said Prince Andrew to himself quite to his own surprise, as he watched her. She did go first to her cousin. "What rubbish sometimes enters one's head!" thought Prince Andrew

Book 6, Chapter 18

Andrew grows disillusioned with Speránski and his committee work.

Summary:

The next day Prince Andrew briefly recalled the previous night's entertainment. He remembered how charming Natásha had been. But Andrew did not spend much time thinking about this, and after his morning tea he started working. Either from fatigue or want of sleep, Andrew could get nothing done that day. In the evening he went to dinner at Speránski's. Seeing for the first time Speránski in his home setting, surrounded by a circle of lackeys, Prince Andrew had a major change of heart. He realized it had been ridiculous of him all along to have expected anything from Speránski and from any of his own activities connected with him, or ever to have attributed importance to what Speránski was doing. He began to see the last four months in a new light. All of his Petersburg committee work, he realized, was really accomplishing nothing. Then, he vividly pictured to himself Boguchárovo, his occupations in the country, and the things he had accomplished there. He felt astonished that he could have wasted so much time on useless work during his four months in Petersburg.

Quote from the chapter:

Prince Andrew listened to the account of the opening of the Council of State, which he had so impatiently awaited and to which he had attached such importance, and was surprised that this event, now that it had taken place, did not affect him, and even seemed quite insignificant. He listened with quiet irony to Bítski's enthusiastic account of it. A very simple thought occurred to him: "What does it matter to me or to Bítski what the Emperor was pleased to say at the Council? Can all that make me any happier or better?" And this simple reflection suddenly destroyed all the interest Prince Andrew had felt in the impending reforms.

Book 6, Chapter 19

Andrew is deeply effected by spending a day with the Rostóvs.

Summary:

Next day Prince Andrew makes a social call at the Rostóvs'. He wanted to see Natásha again. The family welcomes him simply and cordially, and they invite him to dinner. Unexpectedly, spending this day with the Rostóv family deeply moves Andrew. Unable to sleep that evening, he felt his soul was as fresh and joyful as if he had stepped out of a stuffy room into God's own fresh air. It did not enter his head that he was in love with Natásha; but thinking of her made his whole life appear in a new light. "Why do I strive, why do I toil in this narrow, confined frame, when life, all life with all its joys, is open to me?" said he to himself. And for the first time for a very long while he began making happy plans for the future, thinking to retire and to travel. "I must use my freedom while I feel so much strength and youth in me," he said to himself.

Quote from the chapter:

After dinner Natásha, at Prince Andrew's request, went to the clavichord and began singing. Prince Andrew stood by a window talking to the ladies and listened to her. In the midst of a phrase he ceased speaking and suddenly felt tears choking him, a thing he had thought impossible

for him. He looked at Natásha as she sang, and something new and joyful stirred in his soul. He felt happy and at the same time sad. He had absolutely nothing to weep about yet he was ready to weep. What about? His former love? The little princess? His disillusionments?... His hopes for the future?... Yes and no. The chief reason was a sudden, vivid sense of the terrible contrast between something infinitely great and illimitable within him and that limited and material something that he, and even she, was. This contrast weighed on and yet cheered him while she sang.

Book 6, Chapter 20

Hoping to advance socially, Berg and Véra host a small party in their home.

Summary:

This chapter describes a small party given in their drawing room by Berg and Véra. The party is motivated by their desire to rise socially by cultivating relations with more important people. Therefore, they've invited only socially important people like Pierre, Borís, the Rostóvs, and several military officers. Hélène was invited but, thinking the Bergs too far below her, she declines. Borís attends, but seems a bit condescending. Pierre, on the other hand, is sympathetic to the Bergs and makes a point of arriving punctually. The small house party comes off smoothly and the Bergs are pleased. There is pleasant conversation and they play boston. But this particular gathering is not outstanding for any reason. Its a typical party of its type, not unlike many similar parties given by others at this level of society.

Quote from the chapter:

Berg, closely buttoned up in his new uniform, sat beside his wife explaining to her that one always could and should be acquainted with people above one, because only then does one get satisfaction from acquaintances. You can get to know something, you can ask for something. See how I managed from my first promotion." (Berg measured his life not by years but by promotions.) "My comrades are still nobodies, while I am only waiting for a vacancy to command a regiment, and have the happiness to be your husband."

Book 6, Chapter 21

At the Bergs house party, Andrew and Natásha meet once again, and attract some attention.

Summary:

While playing cards, Pierre notices Natásha seems silent and plain until Prince Andrew arrives. Then Natásha comes to life. She was completely transformed and from a plain girl had again become what she had been at the ball. Prince Andrew went up to Pierre, and the latter noticed a new and youthful expression in his friend's face. Pierre thinks "Something very important is happening between them," and a feeling that was both joyful and painful agitated him and made him neglect the game. Véra, too, notices something is up. Véra calls Andrew aside, and begins a conversation with him about feelings in general and about her sister. Véra's self-satisfied talk embarrasses Prince Andrew, and he starts to move away. Véra mentions Borís' former crush on Natásha, which interests Andrew. When Andrew gets a chance, he tells Pierre he needs to talk

with him, hinting it has something to do with being in love. Pierre is called away before the two can talk more.

Quote from the chapter:

Prince Andrew was standing before her, saying something to her with a look of tender solicitude. She, having raised her head, was looking up at him, flushed and evidently trying to master her rapid breathing. And the bright glow of some inner fire that had been suppressed was again alight in her. She was completely transformed and from a plain girl had again become what she had been at the ball. Prince Andrew went up to Pierre, and the latter noticed a new and youthful expression in his friend's face.

Book 6, Chapter 22

Andrew and Natásha's love flowers; meanwhile Pierre sinks into depression.

Summary:

Invited by the Count, Prince Andrew spent the next day at the Rostóv's. Everyone in the house realized for whose sake Prince Andrew came. Andrew is with Natásha all day. Not only in the soul of the frightened yet happy and enraptured Natásha, but in the whole house, there was a feeling of awe at something important that was bound to happen. A marriage seems likely. At the same time, everyone feels a bit awkward and uncertain about the new state of affairs. In the evening, her mother tells Natásha that marriages are made in heaven. Andrew and Natásha are both very happy. Andrew confides his love for Natásha to his friend Pierre. Pierre supports Andrew with a touched and sad expression in his eyes. But the brighter Prince Andrew's lot appeared to him, the gloomier seemed Pierre's. Since the ball, Pierre had begun to feel oppressed and ashamed in court society, and dark thoughts of the vanity of all things human came to him oftener than before. Pierre tries to fight off an approaching bout of depression, and throws himself more vigorously into his Masonic duties.

Quote from the chapter:

It seemed to Natásha that even at the time she first saw Prince Andrew at Otrádnoe she had fallen in love with him. It was as if she feared this strange, unexpected happiness of meeting again the very man she had then chosen (she was firmly convinced she had done so) and of finding him, as it seemed, not indifferent to her. "And it had to happen that he should come specially to Petersburg while we are here. And it had to happen that we should meet at that ball. It is fate. Clearly it is fate that everything led up to this! Already then, directly I saw him I felt something peculiar." .... "Mamma, one need not be ashamed of his being a widower?" "Don't, Natásha! Pray to God. 'Marriages are made in heaven,'" said her mother. "Darling Mummy, how I love you! How happy I am!" cried Natásha, shedding tears of joy and excitement and embracing her mother. At that very time Prince Andrew was sitting with Pierre and telling him of his love for Natásha and his firm resolve to make her his wife.

Book 6, Chapter 23

Natásha and Andrew are engaged, but will wait a year to marry.

Summary:

Andrew visits his father to request permission for the marriage. The old Prince simply dislikes the idea; at his age he simply dislikes changes. But, being diplomatic, the old Prince merely asks that they wait a year to be sure. Andrew agrees to wait. He is inexplicably absent from the Rostóv home for three weeks, and Natásha is distraught, thinking Andrew has abandoned her. But she tries to make the best for her life without Andrew. Then, one day, Andrew returns and proposes to Natásha. But, he tells her, they need to wait a year before marrying. Afterall, its possible she might change her mind. Natásha doesn't want to wait, but she agrees.

Quote from the chapter:

"A whole year!" Natásha repeated suddenly, only now realizing that the marriage was to be postponed for a year. "But why a year? Why a year?..." Prince Andrew began to explain to her the reasons for this delay. Natásha did not hear him. "And can't it be helped?" she asked. Prince Andrew did not reply, but his face expressed the impossibility of altering that decision. "It's awful! Oh, it's awful! awful!" Natásha suddenly cried, and again burst into sobs. "I shall die, waiting a year: it's impossible, it's awful!" She looked into her lover's face and saw in it a look of commiseration and perplexity. "No, no! I'll do anything!" she said, suddenly checking her tears. "I am so happy." The father and mother came into the room and gave the betrothed couple their blessing.

Book 6, Chapter 24

Andrew grows closer to the Rostóv family, and later goes abroad as planned.

Summary:

Andrew begins to visit the Rostóv's every day, while at the same time maintaining a certain distance. He wants Natásha to feel she can still change her mind if she wishes. It takes a little while for the Rostóv's to get used to Andrew, who can seem a bit different at times. But, everyone adjusts. Andrew tells Natásha his son will not be living with them. Andrew does not want to separate his son and his grandfather. This disappoints Natásha. Andrew then prepares to leave to travel abroad He tells her to rely on Pierre if anything bad happens. Pierre can seem a fool, he tells her, but in truth he has a heart of gold.

Quote from the chapter:

No betrothal ceremony took place and Natásha's engagement to Bolkónski was not announced; Prince Andrew insisted on that. He said that as he was responsible for the delay he ought to bear the whole burden of it; that he had given his word and bound himself forever, but that he did not wish to bind Natásha and gave her perfect freedom. If after six months she felt that she did not love him she would have full right to reject him. Naturally neither Natásha nor her parents wished to hear of this, but Prince Andrew was firm. He came every day to the Rostóvs', but did not behave to Natásha as an affianced lover: he did not use the familiar thou, but said you to her, and kissed only her hand. After their engagement, quite different, intimate, and natural relations sprang up between them. It was as if they had not known each other till now.

Book 6, Chapter 25

Princess Mary's life at Bald Hills is very unpleasant after Lise's death.

Summary:

During the year after his son's departure, Prince Nicholas Bolkónski's health and temper became much worse. He grew still more irritable to Princess Mary and others in the household. Mary's greatest joy came from caring for her nephew, little Nicholas, and she relies on her faith for the strength to bear her troubles. In a letter, Mary tells a friend how her religion helped her deal with Lise's death. They won't be traveling to Moscow next Winter, she says, because the old Prince can't stand that Napoleon is negotiating on equal terms with all the sovereigns of Europe and particularly with the Emperor, so they won't travel to Moscow. Princess Mary doesn't believe the rumors of an engagement of Andrew and Natásha, and in fact thinks Natásha would not be a good choice as a wife for Andrew.

Quote from the chapter:

(The old Prince) continually hurt Princess Mary's feelings and tormented her, but it cost her no effort to forgive him. Could he be to blame toward her, or could her father, whom she knew loved her in spite of it all, be unjust? And what is justice? The princess never thought of that proud word "justice." All the complex laws of man centered for her in one clear and simple law—the law of love and self-sacrifice taught us by Him who lovingly suffered for mankind though He Himself was God. What had she to do with the justice or injustice of other people? She had to endure and love, and that she did. During the winter Prince Andrew had come to Bald Hills and had been gay, gentle, and more affectionate than Princess Mary had known him for a long time past. She felt that something had happened to him, but he said nothing to her about his love.

Book 6, Chapter 26

The longsuffering Princess Mary dreams of becoming a pilgrim.

Summary:

Princess Mary receives a letter from Prince Andrew, telling her of his engagement. He hadn't told her sooner fearing Mary would then have to bear the brunt of his father's displeasure. Now, however, Andrew asked Mary to relay a request to the Old Prince that the wedding day be moved up. This causes the old Prince to pour down upon Mary's head a very mean-spirited angry outburst. By now, except for little Nicholas, Andrew, and religion, Mary's life seems to hold only sadness. But everyone needs something to dream of, so Mary begins to dream of leaving it all behind and becoming a poor religious pilgrim like her beloved God folk. For a while, this secret dream supplies the chief consolation of Mary's sad life. But afterwards, when she saw her father and especially little Koko (Nicholas), her resolve weakened. She gives up on the pilgrimage idea. Then, she wept quietly, and felt she must be a sinner who loved her father and little nephew more than God.

Quote from the chapter:

Princess Mary prepared a pilgrim's complete costume for herself: a coarse smock, bast shoes, a rough coat, and a black kerchief. Often, approaching the chest of drawers containing this secret treasure, Princess Mary paused, uncertain whether the time had not already come to put her project into execution. Often, listening to the pilgrims' tales, she was so stimulated by their simple speech, mechanical to them but to her so full of deep meaning, that several times she was on the

point of abandoning everything and running away from home. In imagination she already pictured herself by Theodosia's side, dressed in coarse rags, walking with a staff, a wallet on her back, along the dusty road, directing her wanderings from one saint's shrine to another, free from envy, earthly love, or desire, and reaching at last the place where there is no more sorrow or sighing, but eternal joy and bliss.

Book 7, Chapter 1

The Rostóv's dire finances bring Nicholas home. He senses something is not quite right about Natásha's planned marriage.

Summary:

Nicholas is enjoying the carefree life in the peacetime army. He ignores his mother's request he return until the family is on the brink of bankruptcy. Returning home, he finds everyone seems well. He learns of Natásha's engagement with Andrew. Certain aspects of the planned marriage seem odd to Nicholas. He wonders why Nicholas is nowhere to be seen, and why the two need to wait so long to marry. He finds that his mother too has doubts. The Countess Rostóv wonders, for example, if Prince Andrew might be in poor health.

Quote from the chapter:

This amazed Nicholas and even made him regard Bolkónski's courtship skeptically. He could not believe that her fate was sealed, especially as he had not seen her with Prince Andrew. It always seemed to him that there was something not quite right about this intended marriage. "Why this delay? Why no betrothal?" he thought. Once, when he had touched on this topic with his mother, he discovered, to his surprise and somewhat to his satisfaction, that in the depth of her soul she too had doubts about this marriage. "You see he writes," said she, showing her son a letter of Prince Andrew's, with that latent grudge a mother always has in regard to a daughter's future married happiness, "he writes that he won't come before December. What can be keeping him? Illness, probably! His health is very delicate. Don't tell Natásha.

Book 7, Chapter 2

Nicholas tries to help resolve the Rostóv financial difficulties, but his efforts are ineffective.

Summary:

Nicholas, who was called home because his mother hoped he could help with the family finances, briefly and unsuccessfully tries to help. Soon after arriving, he goes to see their steward Mitenka. Nicholas looks briefly at the books, and then throws Mitenka out, literally kicking him while calling him a thief and a robber. Mitenka hides in the bushes. Later, his father explains to Nicholas that he was mistaken about a sum of 700 rubles which Nicholas incorrectly believed Mitenka had stolen. Later, when asked by his mother about 2,000 rubles owed to them by Borís' mother Anna, Nicholas advises against trying to collect the money. After these brief efforts, Nicholas ceases to involve himself in the Rostóv finances. His brief efforts accomplished nothing, and Nicholas never again meddled in family finances.

Quote from the chapter:

Next day the old count called his son aside and, with an embarrassed smile, said to him: "But you know, my dear boy, it's a pity you got excited! Mítenka has told me all about it." "I knew," thought Nicholas, "that I should never understand anything in this crazy world." "You were angry that he had not entered those 700 rubles. But they were carried forward—and you did not look at the other page." "Papa, he is a blackguard and a thief! I know he is! And what I have done, I have done; but, if you like, I won't speak to him again." "No, my dear boy" (the count, too, felt embarrassed. He knew he had mismanaged his wife's property and was to blame toward his children, but he did not know how to remedy it). "No, I beg you to attend to the business. I am old. I..." "No, Papa. Forgive me if I have caused you unpleasantness. I understand it all less than you do."

Book 7, Chapter 3

One day, Nicholas decides to go on a wolf hunt.

Summary:

One morning in the Fall, young Rostóv sees it's a perfect morning for hunting. Nicholas and his huntsman, who is named Daniel, are aware of a she-wolf who has moved with her cubs into a nearby wooded area. Nicholas talks it over with the huntsman, and he and Daniel decide to organize a hunting party for the day. Just then, Natásha passes by and sees that they are going. She insists on joining them, along with their brother Pétya. Nicholas does not want Natásha along, but she insists on hunting with them. She orders her horses saddled for the hunt.

Quote from the chapter:

"You are going?" asked Natásha. "I knew you would! Sónya said you wouldn't go, but I knew that today is the sort of day when you couldn't help going." "Yes, we are going," replied Nicholas reluctantly, for today, as he intended to hunt seriously, he did not want to take Natásha and Pétya. "We are going, but only wolf hunting: it would be dull for you." "You know it is my greatest pleasure," said Natásha. "It's not fair; you are going by yourself, are having the horses saddled and said nothing to us about it." "'No barrier bars a Russian's path'—we'll go!" shouted Pétya. "But you can't. Mamma said you mustn't," said Nicholas to Natásha. "Yes, I'll go. I shall certainly go," said Natásha decisively. "

Book 7, Chapter 4

The hunt begins. Soon after the wolf slips by the Count.

Summary:

The old count, who had always kept up an enormous hunting establishment but had now handed it all completely over to his son's care, prepared to go out with the others. In an hour's time the whole hunting party was at the porch. This wolf hunt is a huge event, with many family members, grooms, servants, neighbors, and over 130 dogs participating. It's a very organized affair, with everyone knowing their assignments. They all fan out to comb the area where the wolf is believed to be. The dogs soon catch the scent of the wolf cubs, and the dogs and men quickly spring into action. The count hears the dogs coming towards him out of the woods. Ahead of them, a wolf

lopes out of the woods, and disappears again into the bushes. Dogs and hunters come barreling after the wolf. The Count is chastised for allowing the wolf to get by him. But the others continue furiously pursuing the escaping wolf.

Quote from the chapter:

The wolf paused, turned its heavy forehead toward the dogs awkwardly, like a man suffering from the quinsy, and, still slightly swaying from side to side, gave a couple of leaps and with a swish of its tail disappeared into the skirt of the wood. At the same instant, with a cry like a wail, first one hound, then another, and then another, sprang helter-skelter from the wood opposite and the whole pack rushed across the field toward the very spot where the wolf had disappeared. The hazel bushes parted behind the hounds and Daniel's chestnut horse appeared, dark with sweat. On its long back sat Daniel, hunched forward, capless, his disheveled gray hair hanging over his flushed, perspiring face. "Ulyulyulyu! ulyulyu!..." he cried. When he caught sight of the count his eyes flashed lightning. "Blast you!" he shouted, holding up his whip threateningly at the count. "You've let the wolf go!.

Book 7, Chapter 5

They capture the wolf alive. (They decide to gag the wolf with a stick in its mouth, tie up the animal, and carry it off alive.)

Summary:

This chapter describes the continuation of the wolf hunt. Hounds and huntsman continue to pursue the wolf. Nicholas prays he will be the hero of the hunt, but Nicholas' dogs are unable to catch the wolf. Several times the dogs catch up to the wolf, only to have the wolf get away. If the wolf can reach the woods it will likely escape, and this still looks possible. In the end, however, the huntsman Daniel is able to cut off the wolf's escape, allowing the dogs to bring down the wolf long enough for Daniel to be able to fall upon it himself. At this point, Daniel would have been able to stab the wolf with his dagger. Instead, they decide to gag the wolf with a stick in its mouth, tie up the animal, and carry it off alive. The huntsman gather and admire the bound wolf.

Quote from the chapter:

It was evident to the dogs, the hunters, and to the wolf herself that all was now over. The terrified wolf pressed back her ears and tried to rise, but the borzois stuck to her. Daniel rose a little, took a step, and with his whole weight, as if lying down to rest, fell on the wolf, seizing her by the ears. Nicholas was about to stab her, but Daniel whispered, "Don't! We'll gag her!" and, changing his position, set his foot on the wolf's neck. A stick was thrust between her jaws and she was fastened with a leash, as if bridled, her legs were bound together, and Daniel rolled her over once or twice from side to side. With happy, exhausted faces, they laid the old wolf, alive, on a shying and snorting horse and, accompanied by the dogs yelping at her, took her to the place where they were all to meet. The hounds had killed two of the cubs and the borzois three. The huntsmen assembled with their booty and their stories, and all came to look at the wolf

Book 7, Chapter 6

The hunt continues. Nicholas meets Ilágin.

Summary:

After capturing the wolf, it is still early in the day so the hunters move off to some nearby fields to continue the hunt. Soon their hounds locate and give chase to a fox. At the last instant, however, some unknown hunters not belonging to their party step in and kill this fox, which is a breach of ettiquette. A fight between the competing huntsman breaks out, and Nicholas approaches to sort the matter out. The unknown huntsman, it turns out, belongs to Ilágin. Ilágin is friendly to Nicholas, apologizes for what his huntsman did, and offers to allow Nicholas' party to hunt on his land. They admire each others hunting dogs. In the new location they find a hare, which their dogs begin to chase. One of the fastest dogs catches it. When the hare is caught, the excitement causes Natásha to scream. The hare is retrieved and the hunting party moves on.

Quote from the chapter:

Instead of an enemy, Nicholas found in Ilágin a stately and courteous gentleman who was particularly anxious to make the young count's acquaintance. Having ridden up to Nicholas, Ilágin raised his beaver cap and said he much regretted what had occurred and would have the man punished who had allowed himself to seize a fox hunted by someone else's borzois. He hoped to become better acquainted with the count and invited him to draw his covert. Natásha, afraid that her brother would do something dreadful, had followed him in some excitement. Seeing the enemies exchanging friendly greetings, she rode up to them. Ilágin lifted his beaver cap still higher to Natásha and said, with a pleasant smile, that the young countess resembled Diana in her passion for the chase as well as in her beauty, of which he had heard much. To expiate his huntsman's offense, Ilágin pressed the Rostóvs to come to an upland of his about a mile away which he usually kept for himself and which, he said, swarmed with hares. Nicholas agreed, and the hunt, now doubled, moved on.

Book 7, Chapter 7

That evening, they have a pleasant visit at the Uncle's house.

Summary:

Toward evening Ilágin left them, and the hunting party decides to remain in Nicholas' uncle's village. The Uncle's house is rustic, but comfortable. They are served many delicious treats for dinner. Uncle's housekeeper is an excellent cook. After supper, they are entertained by good music. Uncle plays guitar very well. Then Uncle and Natásha do a folk dance. Natásha, despite her upper class background performs the folk dance naturally and quite beautifully. She enjoys the traditional Russian entertainment, but wonders how Prince Andrew would like this sort of entertainment. Natásha much enjoys this light hearted gathering. The Uncle says he plans to finish his days in this pleasant place. Wagons have been called for to take Natásha and Pétya home. Riding home, Natásha says she thinks she will never be happier than she is at that moment.

Quote from the chapter:

Where, how, and when had this young countess, educated by an émigrée French governess, imbibed from the Russian air she breathed that spirit and obtained that manner which the French shawl dance would, one would have supposed, long ago have effaced? But the spirit and the movements were those inimitable and unteachable Russian ones that "Uncle" had expected of her. As soon as she had struck her pose, and smiled triumphantly, proudly, and with sly

merriment, the fear that had at first seized Nicholas and the others that she might not do the right thing was at an end, and they were already admiring her. She did the right thing with such precision, such complete precision, that Anísya Fëdorovna, who had at once handed her the handkerchief she needed for the dance, had tears in her eyes, though she laughed as she watched this slim, graceful countess, reared in silks and velvets and so different from herself, who yet was able to understand all that was in Anísya and in Anísya's father and mother and aunt, and in every Russian man and woman.

Book 7, Chapter 8

Nicholas declines to marry a wealthy heiress, as his mother wishes.

Summary:

The Rostóv family's financial situation continues to worsen. A few cost-cutting measures are attempted, but the Count seems constitutionally incapable of modest living. They are in the country now, but still maintaining a very large staff and entertaining a lot. Worried about how dire are their finances, the Countess suggests Nicholas marry a wealthy heiress. This seems the family's only hope to escape ruin. She has found a suitable wealthy match, and encourages Nicholas to call on her. But Nicholas, who apparently doesn't fully grasp their situation, says he does not wish to marry for money. He declines to visit the wealthy heiress, and instead appears still interested in marrying his poor cousin Sónya.

Quote from the chapter:

Maybe I do love a poor girl," said Nicholas to himself. "Am I to sacrifice my feelings and my honor for money? I wonder how Mamma could speak so to me. Because Sónya is poor I must not love her," he thought, "must not respond to her faithful, devoted love? Yet I should certainly be happier with her than with some doll-like Julie. I can always sacrifice my feelings for my family's welfare," he said to himself, "but I can't coerce my feelings. If I love Sónya, that feeling is for me stronger and higher than all else." Nicholas did not go to Moscow, and the countess did not renew the conversation with him about marriage.

Book 7, Chapter 9

One day around Christmas, a quite bored and pensive Natásha laments Prince Andrew's absence.

Summary:

During the Christmas holiday on one particularly boring day, Natásha is overcome by boredom. She wanders about the house feeling quite unsettled. She wishes Prince Andrew were there. She is overcome by a feeling that the house is oppressively dull and that life is passing her by. At times she bothers house servants for no good reason Regardless of what she does, she is unable to amuse herself. Her mother asks what is the matter, and Natásha laments Andrew's absence. It feels to Natásha as if her life is on hold.

Quote from the chapter:

"Oh, if only he would come quicker! I am so afraid it will never be! And, worst of all, I am growing old—that's the thing! There won't then be in me what there is now. But perhaps he'll come today, will come immediately. Perhaps he has come and is sitting in the drawing room. Perhaps he came yesterday and I have forgotten it." She rose, put down the guitar, and went to the drawing room. All the domestic circle, tutors, governesses, and guests, were already at the tea table. The servants stood round the table—but Prince Andrew was not there and life was going on as before.

Book 7, Chapter 10

Nicholas, Sónya and Natásha spend a pleasant evening together.

Summary:

After tea, Nicholas, Sónya, and Natásha went to the sitting room and pass the time reminiscing about childhood memories and other musings. At some point, Dimmler the musician comes in and plays music on the harp. Then Natásha is asked to sing. After that, they join in a costume game with some of the house serfs who are singing, dancing, and playing Christmas games. A number of them decide to show their costumes to a neighbor, and they set off in several sleighs. Riding with her in the same sleigh, Nicholas notices how charming Sónya looks.

Quote from the chapter:

"A hare's track, a lot of tracks!" rang out Natásha's voice through the frost-bound air. "How light it is, Nicholas!" came Sónya's voice. Nicholas glanced round at Sónya, and bent down to see her face closer. Quite a new, sweet face with black eyebrows and mustaches peeped up at him from her sable furs—so close and yet so distant—in the moonlight. "That used to be Sónya," thought he, and looked at her closer and smiled. "What is it, Nicholas?" "Nothing," said he and turned again to the horses.

Book 7, Chapter 11

The merriment continues at the Melyukóva house. Sónya and NIcholas kiss.

Summary:

The sleighs from the Rostóv house arrive and the merriment continues in the Melyukóva drawing room, with that family joining wholeheartedly into the fun. They thanked them all for the visit and having entertained her so well. The visitors were invited to supper in the drawing room, and the serfs had something served to them in the ballroom. Some ghost stories are told. It's said one can sometimes hear ghost noises in the barn.. Wishing to try this, and saying she is not afraid, Sónya decides to go alone to the barn to listen for ghosts. Captivated by Sónya, Nicholas seizes this opportunity to slip away from the group. Nicholas intercepts Sónya on her way to the barn. They kiss. Then, they return to the house by separate doors.

Quote from the chapter:

Sónya came along, wrapped in her cloak. She was only a couple of paces away when she saw him, and to her too he was not the Nicholas she had known and always slightly feared. He was in a

woman's dress, with tousled hair and a happy smile new to Sónya. She ran rapidly toward him. "Quite different and yet the same," thought Nicholas, looking at her face all lit up by the moonlight. He slipped his arms under the cloak that covered her head, embraced her, pressed her to him, and kissed her on the lips that wore a mustache and had a smell of burnt cork. Sónya kissed him full on the lips, and disengaging her little hands pressed them to his cheeks.

Book 7, Chapter 12

Nicholas realizes he wants to marry Sónya. Sónya and Natásha attempt to conjure a remote vision of Andrew in a mirror.

Summary:

Natásha, who always saw and noticed everything, arranges that Nicholas and Sónya ride home in the same sleigh. Along the way, Nicholas makes up his mind to marry Sónya. When he tells Natásha about this, she thinks its wonderful. Later, at home, Sónya and Natásha imagine their future married lives, thinking that Nicholas and Andrew will become good friends. A little later, they try a distant viewing technique which legend says can allow one to see someone who is very far away. Sónya pretends to Natásha she sees Andrew in the mirror. After this imaginary sighting of Andrew, Natásha goes to bed and lays open-eyed and motionless for a long time, her own desire to see Andrew still unsatisfied.

Quote from the chapter:

"But why shouldn't I say I saw something? Others do see! Besides who can tell whether I saw anything or not?" flashed through Sónya's mind. "Yes, I saw him," she said. "How? Standing or lying?" "No, I saw... At first there was nothing, then I saw him lying down." "Andrew lying? Is he ill?" asked Natásha, her frightened eyes fixed on her friend. "No, on the contrary, on the contrary! His face was cheerful, and he turned to me." And when saying this she herself fancied she had really seen what she described. "Well, and then, Sónya?..." "After that, I could not make out what there was; something blue and red...." "Sónya! When will he come back? When shall I see him! O, God, how afraid I am for him and for myself and about everything!..."

Book 7, Chapter 13

Nicholas' firm intention to marry Sónya nearly tears the Rostóv family apart.

Summary:

Soon after the Christmas holidays Nicholas told his mother of his love for Sónya and of his firm resolve to marry her. The Rostóv household is thrown into turmoil and unhappiness. The Count and Countess sternly oppose the marriage, despite knowing that Sónya would be a good wife, since for Nicholas marrying someone without property would spell the family's financial ruin. Nicholas, loving Sónya, feels he can't back down. Nicholas and his loving mother are on the point of estrangement, when Natásha steps in and barely prevents a permanent breach. Still, the Countess can't help but show her resentment to the innocent Sónya. The Countess' health suffers. Natásha suffers greatly Andrew's absence. The Count, Nicholas and Sónya go to Moscow to sell the fine ancestral Rostóv house and estate there, where they hope they may also find Andrew.

Nicholas, saying he will not sell his feelings by marrying for money, plans to retire from the army and marry Sónya, regardless of his parents wishes.

Quote from the chapter:

After Nicholas had gone things in the Rostóv household were more depressing than ever, and the countess fell ill from mental agitation. Sónya was unhappy at the separation from Nicholas and still more so on account of the hostile tone the countess could not help adopting toward her. The count was more perturbed than ever by the condition of his affairs, which called for some decisive action. Their town house and estate near Moscow had inevitably to be sold, and for this they had to go to Moscow. But the countess' health obliged them to delay their departure from day to day. Natásha, who had borne the first period of separation from her betrothed lightly and even cheerfully, now grew more agitated and impatient every day.

Book 8, Chapter 1

Pierre, overwhelmed by it all, backslides and abruptly changes his way of life.

Summary:

After Prince Andrew's engagement to Natásha, a major change came over Pierre. He lost interest in the life he had been living, and slid back into his bachelor habits, the carefree life of a wealthy consumer. It wasn't that Pierre's beliefs in Freemasonry changed. He still believed in the masonic teachings as much as ever. But any energy he had for that kind of life just evaporated. He slid back into his old habits. He ceased keeping a diary, avoided the company of the Brothers, began going to the club again, drank a great deal, and came once more in touch with the bachelor sets, leading such a life that the Countess Hélène thought it necessary to speak severely to him about it. Pierre felt that she was right, and to avoid compromising her went away to Moscow. He felt really at home in Moscow. There he was affable with everyone, generous to a fault, liked to drink and socialize. He was the life of the party. People liked him even more than before. But he was not now the same person he had been in Petersburg before the engagement of Andrew and Natásha. The internal change he had undergone was profound, and probably not for the good.

Quote from the chapter:

He had the unfortunate capacity many men, especially Russians, have of seeing and believing in the possibility of goodness and truth, but of seeing the evil and falsehood of life too clearly to be able to take a serious part in it. Every sphere of work was connected, in his eyes, with evil and deception. Whatever he tried to be, whatever he engaged in, the evil and falsehood of it repulsed him and blocked every path of activity. Yet he had to live and to find occupation. It was too dreadful to be under the burden of these insoluble problems, so he abandoned himself to any distraction in order to forget them. He frequented every kind of society, drank much, bought pictures, engaged in building, and above all—read.

Book 8, Chapter 2

The old Prince Bolkónski moves to Moscow, where he subjects Mary to increasing emotional abuse.

Summary:

At the beginning of winter Prince Nicholas Bolkónski and his daughter moved to Moscow. Despite his age and increasing senility, the old Prince is widely respected for his public role as the head of the Moscow opposition. But in their Moscow home, Princess Mary was becoming more and more miserable. She a pleasant social life was impossible for her. Her father was rude and dictatorial to her. He exploded at any mention of Andrew's planned marriage. In Moscow, Mary had no friends, no hope of ever marrying, and was separated from the solace of her beloved Godfolk. She could not even write to her former correspondent Julie. She found herself unable to tutor her nephew without becoming irritable. And, worst of all, the old Prince was increasingly affectionate to Mademoiselle Bourienne, ostentatiously raising her social status in the household above his daughter's position and seeming to do so out of spite for Mary. All of this bad treatment caused Mary to feel both anger and then guilt for feeling angry at her aged father.

Quote from the chapter:

Next day the prince did not say a word to his daughter, but she noticed that at dinner he gave orders that Mademoiselle Bourienne should be served first. After dinner, when the footman handed coffee and from habit began with the princess, the prince suddenly grew furious, threw his stick at Philip, and instantly gave instructions to have him conscripted for the army. "He doesn't obey... I said it twice... and he doesn't obey! She is the first person in this house; she's my best friend," cried the prince. "And if you allow yourself," he screamed in a fury, addressing Princess Mary for the first time, "to forget yourself again before her as you dared to do yesterday, I will show you who is master in this house. Go! Don't let me set eyes on you; beg her pardon!"

Book 8, Chapter 3

An innocent visit from a French doctor results in the old Prince ordering Princess Mary to leave the house.

Summary:

A well-regarded French doctor has begun to visit the old Prince on Mademoiselle Bourienne's advice. One day this doctor insisted on seeing the old Prince, despite Mary having been instructed to limit visitors that day. After a short visit, the old Prince throws the doctor out of the house, calling him a French spy, and in his anger tells the Princess she can no longer live in his house. In the evening, the old Prince hosts a small dinner party for six carefully chosen guests for his saint's day. While the guests were present the old Prince behaves civilly with his guests, discussing the latest political news and Napoleon. But, as his dinner guests depart, the old Prince gives Mary to know he is still angry with her and still wants her out of the house.

Quote from the chapter:

After Métivier's departure the old prince called his daughter in, and the whole weight of his wrath fell on her. She was to blame that a spy had been admitted. Had he not told her, yes, told her to make a list, and not to admit anyone who was not on that list? Then why was that scoundrel admitted? She was the cause of it all. With her, he said, he could not have a moment's peace and could not die quietly. "No, ma'am! We must part, we must part! Understand that, understand it! I cannot endure any more," he said, and left the room.

Book 8, Chapter 4

Pierre and Mary chat briefly, but Mary does not open up to Pierre about her problems with her father.

Summary:

After the dinner Pierre stays to chat with Princess Mary. Pierre does not notice that Mary is still upset from her father's last angry outburst. He tells Mary that Borís seems interested in marrying either Mary or her friend Julie. They are both wealthy heiresses. When Pierre asks if Mary would marry Borís, Mary bursts out crying and says sometimes she would happily marry anybody who asked her. Mary is on the point of disclosing to Pierre how she suffers from living with an angry father whom she can never please, but Mary stops herself from telling Pierre about this, even though Pierre can see that something is wrong. To change the subject, Mary brings up the engagement between Andrew and Natásha. They discuss the engagement, and Mary acts as if her only problem is her father's antipathy to Andrew's planned marriage.

Quote from the chapter:

Princess Mary, looking into Pierre's kindly face and still thinking of her own sorrow. "It would be a relief," thought she, "if I ventured to confide what I am feeling to someone. I should like to tell everything to Pierre. He is kind and generous. It would be a relief. He would give me advice." "Would you marry him?" "Oh, my God, Count, there are moments when I would marry anybody!" she cried suddenly to her own surprise and with tears in her voice. "Ah, how bitter it is to love someone near to you and to feel that..." she went on in a trembling voice, "that you can do nothing for him but grieve him, and to know that you cannot alter this. Then there is only one thing left—to go away, but where could I go?" "What is wrong? What is it, Princess?" But without finishing what she was saying, Princess Mary burst into tears. "I don't know what is the matter with me today. Don't take any notice—forget what I have said!"

Book 8, Chapter 5

Borís, wavering between the two wealthy heiresses Mary and Julie, decides to marry Julie.

Summary:

Borís had come to Moscow to find a wealthy wife, and he wavers between the two richest heiresses in town, Julie and Mary. Borís actually likes Mary better, but Mary seems a very difficult person to become close with. Julie, on the other hand, welcomes his attentions and those two spend days together in the conceit of their being two melancholy, sensitive kindred spirits who have found one another. Both Borís and his mother decide Julie would make a good match from a financial point of view. Something about Julie bothers Borís, though, so he holds off proposing until his leave is almost expired. Then Anatole begins to pay court to Julie, and Borís decides he can wait no longer. Borís proposes to Julie and she accepts.

Quote from the chapter:

"I can always arrange so as not to see her often," thought Borís. "The affair has been begun and must be finished!" He blushed hotly, raised his eyes to hers, and said: "You know my feelings for you!" There was no need to say more: Julie's face shone with triumph and self-satisfaction; but she forced Borís to say all that is said on such occasions—that he loved her and had never loved

any other woman more than her. She knew that for the Pénza estates and Nizhegórod forests she could demand this, and she received what she demanded.

Book 8, Chapter 6

The Rostóvs arrive in Moscow and prepare to meet old Prince Bolkónski.

Summary:

Count Rostóv arrives in Moscow with Natásha and Sónya. Their estate there had to be sold, besides which they would introduce his future daughter-in-law to old Prince Bolkónski. They will be staying with Márya Dmítrievna, a family friend. Their hostess is very organized and helpful, and she takes control of the Rostóv's visit to ensure it runs smoothly. In particular, in a private moment their hostess cautions Natásha that that old Prince Nicholas is crotchety and much dislikes his son's marrying. Natásha she says, will have to be kind, and use her wits to get along well with him and with her future sister-in-law Mary. Natásha resents this intrusion into her private affairs, but says nothing.

Quote from the chapter:

"Well, now we'll talk. I congratulate you on your betrothed. You've hooked a fine fellow! I am glad for your sake and I've known him since he was so high." She held her hand a couple of feet from the ground. Natásha blushed happily. "I like him and all his family. Now listen! You know that old Prince Nicholas much dislikes his son's marrying. The old fellow's crotchety! Of course Prince Andrew is not a child and can shift without him, but it's not nice to enter a family against a father's will. One wants to do it peacefully and lovingly. You're a clever girl and you'll know how to manage. Be kind, and use your wits. Then all will be well." Natásha remained silent, from shyness Márya Dmítrievna supposed, but really because she disliked anyone interfering in what touched her love of Prince Andrew, which seemed to her so apart from all human affairs that no one could understand it. She loved and knew Prince Andrew, he loved her only, and was to come one of these days and take her. She wanted nothing more.

Book 8, Chapter 7

Old Prince Bolkónski's pointedly unfriendly reception of the Rostóv's makes Natásha cry.

Summary:

Count Rostóv and Natásha go to meet old Prince Bolkónski and Mary. They get a very rude reception, the old Prince at first declining to see them. Mary receives them instead. Count Rostóv leaves the two alone to chat for a while. Then the old Prince, dressed very casually, looks in on them and pretends surprise at seeing Natásha in his house. The old Prince then leaves the room. Mademoiselle Bourienne remains in the room uninvited, preventing Mary and Natásha having a private conversation. Under these stressful conditions, neither Mary nor Natásha is able to show much kindness for the other, and they are unable to have an intimate conversation. At home that afternoon, a very sad Natásha cries over how badly her first encounter with her new family has gone.

Quote from the chapter:

When the count was already leaving the room, Princess Mary went up hurriedly to Natásha, took her by the hand, and said with a deep sigh: "Wait, I must..." Natásha glanced at her ironically without knowing why. "Dear Natalie," said Princess Mary, "I want you to know that I am glad my brother has found happiness...." She paused, feeling that she was not telling the truth. Natásha noticed this and guessed its reason. "I think, Princess, it is not convenient to speak of that now," she said with external dignity and coldness, though she felt the tears choking her. "What have I said and what have I done?" thought she, as soon as she was out of the room. They waited a long time for Natásha to come to dinner that day. She sat in her room crying like a child, blowing her nose and sobbing.

Book 8, Chapter 8

That evening, the Rostóv's go to the Opera.

Summary:

That evening the Rostóvs went to the Opera. Natásha did not want to go. She only went because their hostess Márya Dmítrievna had been so kind as to obtain the tickets. She wishes Andrew were there, realizing its only him she cares about. What the old Prince and Mary think of her is no matter. When they enter their box at the opera hall, many looked at Sónya and Natásha and noticed how pretty they looked. During the interval before the opera began, the Rostóv's, too, looked around the hall and saw many people they knew. For example, they saw Borís with Julie and his mother, Dólokhov, and Hélène. When the music begins everyone turns their attention to the stage.

Quote from the chapter:

The two remarkably pretty girls, Natásha and Sónya, with Count Rostóv who had not been seen in Moscow for a long time, attracted general attention. Moreover, everybody knew vaguely of Natásha's engagement to Prince Andrew, and knew that the Rostóvs had lived in the country ever since, and all looked with curiosity at a fiancée who was making one of the best matches in Russia. Natásha's looks, as everyone told her, had improved in the country, and that evening thanks to her agitation she was particularly pretty. She struck those who saw her by her fullness of life and beauty, combined with her indifference to everything about her.

Book 8, Chapter 9

The opera continues. The Rostóvs interact with more people they know there.

Summary:

At first the opera seems a bit silly to Natásha, who is in a serious mood that night. The crowd loves the opera, though, and in time Natásha warms to it. She sees Anatole, who seems to be staring at Natásha all evening. Borís stops by their box and they congratulate him on his engagement. He invites them to his wedding. They see Pierre, who seems sad that evening, and Pierre talks to Natásha for a long time. The popular Hélène is seated close by with her circle of male admirerers. Hélène invites Natásha to sit with her during one of the acts, so they can become

better acquainted. They see Dólokhov, who is seated with Anatole. Throughout the evening, the crowd applauds at intervals.

Quote from the chapter:

During the whole of that entr'acte Kurágin stood with Dólokhov in front of the orchestra partition, looking at the Rostóvs' box. Natásha knew he was talking about her and this afforded her pleasure. She even turned so that he should see her profile in what she thought was its most becoming aspect. Before the beginning of the second act Pierre appeared in the stalls. The Rostóvs had not seen him since their arrival. His face looked sad, and he had grown still stouter since Natásha last saw him. He passed up to the front rows, not noticing anyone. Anatole went up to him and began speaking to him, looking at and indicating the Rostóvs' box. On seeing Natásha Pierre grew animated and, hastily passing between the rows, came toward their box. When he got there he leaned on his elbows and, smiling, talked to her for a long time. While conversing with Pierre, Natásha heard a man's voice in Countess Bezúkhova's box and something told her it was Kurágin. She turned and their eyes met. Almost smiling, he gazed straight into her eyes with such an enraptured caressing look that it seemed strange to be so near him, to look at him like that, to be so sure he admired her, and not to be acquainted with him.

Book 8, Chapter 10

Anatole's outgoing charm and friendliness to Natásha at the opera makes her anxious.

Summary:

While Natásha is seated with Hélène at the opera, her handsome brother Anatole comes by and is introduced to Natásha. Anatole is clearly enraptured with Natásha. He is overly friendly, glares and smiles constantly at her, compliments her beauty and invites her to a costume party. Anatole's charm offensive makes Natásha feel herself terribly near to Anatole. However, all of this in turn makes Natásha feel agitated and tormented. She feels that she has somehow been unfaithful to Prince Andrew, even though Natásha did absolutely nothing to encourage him. This is the sort of thing she would ordinarily talk over with her mother in the evening, but the Countess is not with them in Moscow. Still upset in the evening, Natásha laments Andrew's absence.

Quote from the chapter:

"Am I spoiled for Andrew's love or not?" she asked herself, and with soothing irony replied: "What a fool I am to ask that! What did happen to me? Nothing! I have done nothing, I didn't lead him on at all. Nobody will know and I shall never see him again," she told herself. "So it is plain that nothing has happened and there is nothing to repent of, and Andrew can love me still. But why 'still?' O God, why isn't he here?" Natásha quieted herself for a moment, but again some instinct told her that though all this was true, and though nothing had happened, yet the former purity of her love for Prince Andrew had perished. And again in imagination she went over her whole conversation with Kurágin, and again saw the face, gestures, and tender smile of that bold handsome man when he pressed her arm.

Book 8, Chapter 11

The ever irresponsible, unprincipled Anatole hopes to make love to Natásha.

Summary:

Anatole's father Vasíli, no longer willing to pay his son's debts, sent Anatole to Moscow to find a wealthy wife. But Anatole had actually married someone two years earlier. He then abandoned this wife. At this point, Anatole believes he ought to be able to continue living a dissipated bachelor life forever, as if this was his birthright. In Moscow, Anatole has become a protege of Dólokhov. Dólokhov uses Anatole as a bait to draw rich young men into his gambling set. Anatole tells Dólokhov of his desire to make love to Natásha. Dólokhov tells Anatole its risky and to take care, but the feckless Anatole isn't at all interested in Dólokhov's advice. As always, he wants to live only for himself.

Quote from the chapter:

Natásha had made a strong impression on Kurágin. At supper after the opera he described to Dólokhov with the air of a connoisseur the attractions of her arms, shoulders, feet, and hair and expressed his intention of making love to her. Anatole had no notion and was incapable of considering what might come of such love-making, as he never had any notion of the outcome of any of his actions. "She's first-rate, my dear fellow, but not for us," replied Dólokhov. "I will tell my sister to ask her to dinner," said Anatole. "Eh?" "You'd better wait till she's married...." "You know, I adore little girls, they lose their heads at once," pursued Anatole. "You have been caught once already by a 'little girl,'" said Dólokhov who knew of Kurágin's marriage. "Take care!"

Book 8, Chapter 12

Despite knowing she is engaged, Hélène invites Natásha to a social gathering so that Anatole can see her again.

Summary:

Natásha, still concerned with Anatole's behavior at the opera, wonders why Prince Andrew still has not come to see her. Then Hélène visits the Rostóv's and invites Hélène and her family to a gathering at her house. She says that her brother, who will be at the party, is quite taken with Natásha and really wants to see her again. Hélène well knows Natásha is engaged to Andrew, but she is heedless. She tells Natásha Andrew would want her to go, so Natásha agrees to attend the party. Meanwhile, their hostess in Moscow, Márya Dmítrievna, goes to try to sort matters out with the old Prince. Natásha tells Anna about Hélène's party invitation. Anna says she thinks it a bad idea, but that Natásha should go if she has already promised. Anna says she will tell Natásha the next day what she's found out from visiting the old Prince.

Quote from the chapter:

The idea of throwing her brother and Natásha together amused her. Though at one time, in Petersburg, she had been annoyed with Natásha for drawing Borís away, she did not think of that now, and in her own way heartily wished Natásha well. As she was leaving the Rostóvs she called her protégée aside. "My brother dined with me yesterday—we nearly died of laughter—he ate nothing and kept sighing for you, my charmer! He is madly, quite madly, in love with you, my dear." Natásha blushed scarlet when she heard this. "How she blushes, how she blushes, my pretty!" said Hélène. "You must certainly come. If you love somebody, my charmer, that is not a

reason to shut yourself up. Even if you are engaged, I am sure your fiancé would wish you to go into society rather than be bored to death."

Book 8, Chapter 13

At the party, Anatole declares his love for Natásha and kisses her. Natásha's affections become confused.

Summary:

Count Rostóv takes the girls to the reception at Hélène's, where an actress will be doing a recitation that evening for the group's entertainment. The Count is disappointed to see that Hélène seems to have invited quite a few men and women of dubious reputation. Anatole is there, and when he gets a chance to speak privately to Natásha, he tells her he loves her and then he kisses her. Natásha tells Anatole she is engaged already to Prince Andrew and she loves Andrew. Hélène breaks up this tête-à-tête. Hélène brings Natásha back to the main group. Later there is dancing and Anatole repeatedly tries to woo Natásha. The Rostóvs leave the gathering before the meal is served, but the experience has left Natásha quite confused. Natásha really does find Anatole attractive, and she is unsure whether it's Andrew or Anatole that she loves.

Quote from the chapter:

"Natalie, just a word, only one!" he kept repeating, evidently not knowing what to say and he repeated it till Hélène came up to them. Hélène returned with Natásha to the drawing room. The Rostóvs went away without staying for supper. After reaching home Natásha did not sleep all night. She was tormented by the insoluble question whether she loved Anatole or Prince Andrew. She loved Prince Andrew—she remembered distinctly how deeply she loved him. But she also loved Anatole, of that there was no doubt. "Else how could all this have happened?" thought she. "If, after that, I could return his smile when saying good-by, if I was able to let it come to that, it means that I loved him from the first. It means that he is kind, noble, and splendid, and I could not help loving him. What am I to do if I love him and the other one too?" she asked herself, unable to find an answer to these terrible questions.

Book 8, Chapter 14

With no reason to remain in Moscow, Count Rostóv decides to take the girls back to their country estate. Anatole sends a letter urging Natásha to run away with him.

Summary:

After her meeting with him, Anna has decided the old Prince is just crazy and there is no point in the Rostóv's remaining in Moscow. She suggests they return to the Rostóv country estate in Otrádnoe and await Andrew there. Count Rostóv agrees. But, later in her room, Natásha wonders if she should not just break off her relationship with Andrew and marry Anatole. Just then, a servant brings in a love letter from Anatole pleading with Natásha to run away with him, because he loves her so much. Natásha wonders if she should break off her engagement with Andrew to marry Anatole. Anatole has not told her he is already married.

Quote from the chapter:

After dinner Natásha went to her room and again took up Princess Mary's letter. "Can it be that it is all over?" she thought. "Can it be that all this has happened so quickly and has destroyed all that went before?" She recalled her love for Prince Andrew in all its former strength, and at the same time felt that she loved Kurágin. She vividly pictured herself as Prince Andrew's wife, and the scenes of happiness with him she had so often repeated in her imagination, and at the same time, aglow with excitement, recalled every detail of yesterday's interview with Anatole. "Why could that not be as well?" she sometimes asked herself in complete bewilderment. "Only so could I be completely happy; but now I have to choose, and I can't be happy without either of them. Only," she thought, "to tell Prince Andrew what has happened or to hide it from him are both equally impossible.

Book 8, Chapter 15

Sónya finds Anatole's letter to Natásha and confronts her. Natásha, it seems, is about to elope with Anatole. Sónya vows to guard her door to prevent Natásha from leaving.

Summary:

Sónya happens to find Anatole's letter and confronts Natásha. Natásha now says she loves Anatole and wants to be his slave. Natásha tells her Anatole is a wonderful person. Sónya can't believe what she is hearing. She tries to point out that Anatole is not behaving honorably, but Natásha will not listen to her. It seems she has sent a letter to Princess Mary to break off her relationship with Andrew. Sónya says she will not keep Natásha's secret. She watches Natásha closely and notices she has been acting oddly. Sónya concludes that Natásha is about to elope with Anatole, which will bring ruin to Natásha and bring disgrace to the family. Sónya resolves to stand guard at Natásha's door for as long as it takes to prevent her eloping.

Quote from the chapter:

"Yes, that's it, she means to elope with him, but what am I to do?" thought she, recalling all the signs that clearly indicated that Natásha had some terrible intention. "The count is away. What am I to do? Write to Kurágin demanding an explanation? But what is there to oblige him to reply? Write to Pierre, as Prince Andrew asked me to in case of some misfortune?... But perhaps she really has already refused Bolkónski—she sent a letter to Princess Mary yesterday. And Uncle is away...." To tell Márya Dmítrievna who had such faith in Natásha seemed to Sónya terrible. "Well, anyway," thought Sónya as she stood in the dark passage, "now or never I must prove that I remember the family's goodness to me and that I love Nicholas. Yes! If I don't sleep for three nights I'll not leave this passage and will hold her back by force and will and not let the family be disgraced," thought she.

Book 8, Chapter 16

Once the plan to abduct Natásha is in place, Dólokhov tries to get Anatole to reconsider.

Summary:

Anatole had lately moved to Dólokhov's. The plan for Natalie Rostóva's abduction had been arranged and the preparations made by Dólokhov a few days before, and on the day that Sónya,

after listening at Natásha's door, resolved to safeguard her, it was to have been put into execution. But Dólokhov urges Anatole not to go through with it. He says it is a bad idea. First of all, Dólokhov points out that it would be illegal for Anatole to marry Natásha, since he is already married. Anatole would very likely face criminal charges. Secondly, although Anatole has borrowed the money he needs to elope, after that he and Natásha would have no money to live on. So, from a practical perspective, it is a stupid plan. Dólokhov earnestly tries to get Anatole to drop the idea, but Anatole is having none of it. Having failed to talk Anatole out of his plan, Dólokhov gives up trying. They talk to a trusted troyka driver who will drive the sleigh to be used by Natásha and Anatole.

Quote from the chapter:

"I helped you, but all the same I must tell you the truth; it is a dangerous business, and if you think about it—a stupid business. Well, you'll carry her off—all right! Will they let it stop at that? It will come out that you're already married. Why, they'll have you in the criminal court...." "Oh, nonsense, nonsense!" Anatole ejaculated and again made a grimace. "Didn't I explain to you? What?" And Anatole, with the partiality dull-witted people have for any conclusion they have reached by their own reasoning, repeated the argument he had already put to Dólokhov a hundred times. "Didn't I explain to you that I have come to this conclusion: if this marriage is invalid," he went on, crooking one finger, "then I have nothing to answer for; but if it is valid, no matter! Abroad no one will know anything about it. Isn't that so? And don't talk to me, don't, don't." "Seriously, you'd better drop it! You'll only get yourself into a mess!"

Book 8, Chapter 17

The elopement plot is foiled.

Summary:

Anatole and Dólokhov set off to abduct Natásha for the planned elopement. But as soon as Anatole steps onto the porch of the house where the Rostóvs are staying, he is intercepted by Márya Dmítrievna's gigantic footman. The footman attempts to detain Anatole, and he and Dólokhov just manage to escape from the house. Anatole's plan to elope with Natásha has been foiled.

Quote from the chapter:

"Come to the mistress, please," said the footman in his deep bass, intercepting any retreat. "To what Mistress? Who are you?" asked Anatole in a breathless whisper. "Kindly step in, my orders are to bring you in." "Kurágin! Come back!" shouted Dólokhov. "Betrayed! Back!" Dólokhov, after Anatole entered, had remained at the wicket gate and was struggling with the yard porter who was trying to lock it. With a last desperate effort Dólokhov pushed the porter aside, and when Anatole ran back seized him by the arm, pulled him through the wicket, and ran back with him to the troyka.

Book 8, Chapter 18

In the aftermath of the failed elopement plot, Márya Dmítrievna is livid with Natásha, but hopes to keep the matter a secret from Count Rostóv.

Summary:

Earlier, Márya Dmítrievna had found Sónya weeping in the corridor and made her confess everything. After reading Anatole's note, Márya locked Natásha in her room and gave orders the would-be abductors should be detained and brought to her. When she learns the men have managed to get away, Márya enters Natásha's room and scolds her bitterly for what she has done. Natásha, who has been sobbing in her room and is quite distraught, remains defiant. She tells Márya that she has broken off her engagement with Andrew, and that in Natásha's opinion Anatole "is better than any of you!" Despite her anger, the practical Márya thinks it would be better for everyone for the story to be kept quiet. When Count Rostóv returns from a real estate trip the next day, he is told nothing has happened while he was away. It's obvious to the Count that something must have happened while he was gone, but the Count does not demand to know what happened.

Quote from the chapter:

And Márya Dmítrievna touched her arm. "Listen when I speak! You've disgraced yourself like the lowest of hussies. I'd treat you differently, but I'm sorry for your father, so I will conceal it." Natásha did not change her position, but her whole body heaved with noiseless, convulsive sobs which choked her. Márya Dmítrievna glanced round at Sónya and seated herself on the sofa beside Natásha. "It's lucky for him that he escaped me; but I'll find him!" she said in her rough voice. "Do you hear what I am saying or not?" she added.

Book 8, Chapter 19

Fearing a duel, Márya reaches out to Pierre for help. Pierre tells her about Anatole's prior marriage.

Summary:

Pierre receives a letter from Márya Dmítrievna requesting he come and see her on a matter of great importance. On his way there, he sees the dandy Anatole on the streets who greets him cheerily. Upon arriving, Márya Dmítrievna tells Pierre everything. Pierre tells Márya Anatole is already married, which further disgusts Márya. Márya, afraid that the count or Bolkónski may challenge Anatole to a duel if they knew, asks Pierre to get Anatole to leave Moscow. Márya goes to tell Natásha that Anatole is already married. Natásha can't believe it and asks to hear it from Pierre himself. On his way to Natásha's room, Pierre meets Count Rostóv, who only knows that Natásha has broken off her engagement with Andrew. The Count tells Pierre he wishes the Countess was with them in Moscow. When Pierre reaches Natásha's room, he feels sympathy for her. Natásha, for her part, takes no interest in Pierre and only asks to be left alone when Pierre confirms to her that Anatole is already married.

Quote from the chapter:

And having put him on his honor not to repeat anything she told him, Márya Dmítrievna informed him that Natásha had refused Prince Andrew without her parents' knowledge and that the cause of this was Anatole Kurágin into whose society Pierre's wife had thrown her and with whom Natásha had tried to elope during her father's absence, in order to be married secretly. Pierre raised his shoulders and listened open-mouthed to what was told him, scarcely able to believe his own ears. That Prince Andrew's deeply loved affianced wife—the same Natásha Rostóva who

used to be so charming—should give up Bolkónski for that fool Anatole who was already secretly married (as Pierre knew), and should be so in love with him as to agree to run away with him, was something Pierre could not conceive and could not imagine.

Book 8, Chapter 20

Pierre finds Anatole at Hélène's soriee and, after Pierre's initial rage passes, convinces Anatole to leave Moscow.

Summary:

Pierre looks everywhere for Anatole, not finding him anywhere. At the club, Pierre learns everyone is talking about the elopement. Anatole was at Dólokhov's trying to think of a way to see Natásha again. Later, when Pierre returns home, he finds Anatole at Hélène's soriee. Anatole had come hoping his sister Hélène would again help him arrange a meeting with Natásha. Seeing Anatole among Hélène's guests, Pierre is overcome with rage. He abruptly pulls Anatole aside. Pierre seems on the point of hurting Anatole. But, calming down, Pierre asks Anatole only to leave town, to never speak of the affair to anyone, and to turn over any letters he may have of Natásha's. To save face, Anatole asks Pierre to take back what he has said, and the now calmer Pierre does so. At this, Anatole smiled. The expression of that base and cringing smile, which Pierre knew so well in his wife, revolted him. “Oh, vile and heartless brood!” he exclaimed, and left the room. The next day Anatole leaves for Petersburg.

Quote from the chapter:

Having entered his study Pierre closed the door and addressed Anatole without looking at him. “You promised Countess Rostóva to marry her and were about to elope with her, is that so?” “Mon cher,” answered Anatole (their whole conversation was in French), “I don’t consider myself bound to answer questions put to me in that tone.” Pierre’s face, already pale, became distorted by fury. He seized Anatole by the collar of his uniform with his big hand and shook him from side to side till Anatole’s face showed a sufficient degree of terror. “When I tell you that I must talk to you!...” repeated Pierre. “Come now, this is stupid. What?” said Anatole, fingering a button of his collar that had been wrenched loose with a bit of the cloth. “You’re a scoundrel and a blackguard, and I don’t know what deprives me from the pleasure of smashing your head with this!” said Pierre, expressing himself so artificially because he was talking French. He took a heavy paperweight and lifted it threateningly, but at once put it back in its place.

Book 8, Chapter 21

Natásha attempts suicide. Natásha's rejection of Prince Andrew has left his family feeling contempt for the Rostóvs.

Summary:

Going to tell Márya Dmítrievna of Anatole's departure from Moscow, Pierre learns that Natásha has tried to kill herself after finding out about Anatole's prior marriage. Natásha swallows some poison, but then tells Sónya what she has done and is given antidotes. She is very ill but recovering, and her mother has been summoned to Moscow. Pierre then goes to see Andrew, who

has returned to Moscow. At the Bolkónski house, Natásha's rejection of Prince Andrew has generated animosity towards the Rostóv family, and the Old Prince and Princess Mary seem almost glad the marriage is off. Prince Andrew says he wishes Natásha well, but he seems very ready to forget her and move on with his life. Prince Andrew gives Pierre Natásha's letters to return to the Countess. Andrew talks politics with his father as though nothing has happened.

Quote from the chapter:

"And where is your brother-in-law now, if I may ask?" he said. "He has gone to Peters... But I don't know," said Pierre. "Well, it doesn't matter," said Prince Andrew. "Tell Countess Rostóva that she was and is perfectly free and that I wish her all that is good." Pierre took the packet. Prince Andrew, as if trying to remember whether he had something more to say, or waiting to see if Pierre would say anything, looked fixedly at him. "I say, do you remember our discussion in Petersburg?" asked Pierre, "about..." "Yes," returned Prince Andrew hastily. "I said that a fallen woman should be forgiven, but I didn't say I could forgive her. I can't."

Book 8, Chapter 22

Pierre's sympathy for Natásha evokes an expression of tenderness to her which both she and he find deeply moving. Pierre sees the comet.

Summary:

Pierre goes to the Rostóv house to return Natásha's letters, as per Andrew's request. Natásha, still looking very weak, asks to see Pierre. She tells him to tell Andrew how sorry she is. She knows things between her and Andrew are over now, but she still wants Andrew to know how sorry she is for the pain she caused him. Deeply moved by how dejected Natásha looks, Pierre tells her she still has her whole life ahead of her. Natásha says no, it's all over. Pierre, himself overcome with emotion, tells her if things were different he himself would beg for her hand. For the first time for many days Natásha wept tears of gratitude and tenderness, and glancing at Pierre she went out of the room. Pierre, restraining tears of tenderness, hastens home. His emotional encounter with Natásha has left him highly agitated if not elated. Something within Pierre seems to have reawakened. On his way home, Pierre sees in the sky the enormous and brilliant comet of 1812.

Quote from the chapter:

Don't speak to me like that. I am not worth it!" exclaimed Natásha and turned to leave the room, but Pierre held her hand. He knew he had something more to say to her. But when he said it he was amazed at his own words. "Stop, stop! You have your whole life before you," said he to her. "Before me? No! All is over for me," she replied with shame and self-abasement. "All over?" he repeated. "If I were not myself, but the handsomest, cleverest, and best man in the world, and were free, I would this moment ask on my knees for your hand and your love!" For the first time for many days Natásha wept tears of gratitude and tenderness, and glancing at Pierre she went out of the room. Pierre too when she had gone almost ran into the anteroom, restraining tears of tenderness and joy that choked him,

Book 9, Chapter 1

Essay: Is the cause of the 1812 French Invasion of Russia knowable?

Summary:

This chapter is a philosophical essay in which Tolstoy ponders what caused the French Invasion of Russia in 1812. He writes Millions of men perpetrated against one another such innumerable crimes, frauds, treacheries, thefts, forgeries, issues of false money, burglaries, incendiarisms, and murders as in whole centuries are not recorded in the annals of all the law courts of the world, but which those who committed them did not at the time regard as being crimes. What produced this extraordinary occurrence? He says that any number of individuals could cite any number of causes, and everyone involved felt that their own reasons for their own part of the actions were reasonable. In the end, he concludes, nothing is the cause, that there is only the coincidence of conditions in which all vital organic and elemental events occur.

Quote from the chapter:

Nothing is the cause. All this is only the coincidence of conditions in which all vital organic and elemental events occur. And the botanist who finds that the apple falls because the cellular tissue decays and so forth is equally right with the child who stands under the tree and says the apple fell because he wanted to eat it and prayed for it. Equally right or wrong is he who says that Napoleon went to Moscow because he wanted to, and perished because Alexander desired his destruction, and he who says that an undermined hill weighing a million tons fell because the last navvy struck it for the last time with his mattock. In historic events the so-called great men are labels giving names to events, and like labels they have but the smallest connection with the event itself. Every act of theirs, which appears to them an act of their own will, is in an historical sense involuntary and is related to the whole course of history and predestined from eternity.

Book 9, Chapter 2

Napoleon begins his westward advance by crossing the Nieman river.

Summary:

This chapter describes the scene as Napoleon begins his westward advance and crosses the Niemen river. Early in the morning of the twelfth of June, Napoleon looked through a spyglass at the streams of his troops pouring out of the Vilkavisski forest and flowing over the three bridges thrown across the river. The troops, knowing of the Emperor's presence, threw up their caps and shouted: "Vive l'Empereur!" and one after another poured in a ceaseless stream out of the vast forest that had concealed them and, separating, flowed on and on by the three bridges to the other side. A group of Polish soldiers, wishing to demonstrate their zeal, attempt to swim across on their horses even though there is a suitable ford not far off. Some of these horses and men drown needlessly, but Napoleon seems unconcerned.

Quote from the chapter:

It was cold and uncanny in the rapid current in the middle of the stream, and the Uhlans caught hold of one another as they fell off their horses. Some of the horses were drowned and some of the men; the others tried to swim on, some in the saddle and some clinging to their horses' manes. They tried to make their way forward to the opposite bank and, though there was a ford one third of a mile away, were proud that they were swimming and drowning in this river under the eyes of the man who sat on the log and was not even looking at what they were doing. When the aide-de-camp, having returned and choosing an opportune moment, ventured to draw the Emperor's

attention to the devotion of the Poles to his person, the little man in the gray overcoat got up and, having summoned Berthier, began pacing up and down the bank with him, giving him instructions and occasionally glancing disapprovingly at the drowning Uhlans who distracted his attention.

Book 9, Chapter 3

News of Napoleon's army advancing towards Russia reaches the Russian Emperor, who was unprepared for war.

Summary:

On the day Napoleon issued the orders for the crossing the Niemen, the Russian Emperor Alexander was being entertained at a lavish ball given in his honor. Alexander had been in Vílna for more than a month, but little attention had gone into preparing for a war. Everyone instead was focused on giving the Emperor a pleasant time. Borís, who since marrying had become very wealthy, was at the ball when news of Napoleon's troop movements reached the Emperor. Hélène was there also. Borís, was one of the first to hear about it. When the news reached the him, the Emperor went home and composed a letter to Napoleon, in which he insisted he would not make peace so long as a single armed Frenchman remained on Russian soil. The Emperor urged Napoleon to withdraw so that they could continue their friendly relations.

Quote from the chapter:

The Emperor, with the agitation of one who has been personally affronted, was finishing with these words: "To enter Russia without declaring war! I will not make peace as long as a single armed enemy remains in my country!" It seemed to Borís that it gave the Emperor pleasure to utter these words. He was satisfied with the form in which he had expressed his thoughts, but displeased that Borís had overheard it. "Let no one know of it!" the Emperor added with a frown. Borís understood that this was meant for him and, closing his eyes, slightly bowed his head. The Emperor re-entered the ballroom and remained there about another half-hour. Borís was thus the first to learn the news that the French army had crossed the Niemen and, thanks to this, was able to show certain important personages that much that was concealed from others was usually known to him, and by this means he rose higher in their estimation.

Book 9, Chapter 4

Emperor Alexander sends Balashëv to Napoleon to deliver his letter and a personal message.

Summary:

General Balashëv sets off to deliver Alexander's letter to the French Emperor. The Emperor also instructed him to verbally tell Napoleon that Alexander would not make peace so long as a single armed enemy remained on Russian soil. The Emperor hopes they can avoid war, though. Balashëv, as adjutant general to the Emperor Alexander, supposed he would very soon be promptly brought before Napoleon himself. But instead, Balashëv is repeatedly halted by lower level French military personnel before being permitted to continue on his way. By the end of this chapter, Balashëv has been stopped three times, but still has not reached Napoleon's headquarters.

Quote from the chapter:

The noncommissioned officer frowned and, muttering words of abuse, advanced his horse's chest against Balashëv, put his hand to his saber, and shouted rudely at the Russian general, asking: was he deaf that he did not do as he was told? Balashëv mentioned who he was. The noncommissioned officer began talking with his comrades about regimental matters without looking at the Russian general. After living at the seat of the highest authority and power, after conversing with the Emperor less than three hours before, and in general being accustomed to the respect due to his rank in the service, Balashëv found it very strange here on Russian soil to encounter this hostile, and still more this disrespectful, application of brute force to himself.

Book 9, Chapter 5

General Balashëv is made to wait in a French camp for five days before being given an audience with Napoleon.

Summary:

General Balashëv was sent to the headquarters of a French military commander named Davout. Davout is surly and rude. The uncivil Davout insists on reading the Emperor's letter, despite the Emperor's instructions that Balashëv hand the letter to Napoleon himself. Balashëv is given quarters in Davout's camp. After four days of solitude, ennui, and consciousness of his impotence and insignificance—particularly acute by contrast with the sphere of power in which he had so lately moved—and after several marches with the marshal's baggage and the French army, which occupied the whole district, Balashëv was brought to Vílna—now occupied by the French—through the very gate by which he had left it four days previously. The next day, Napoleon received Balashëv. Ironically, Napoleon is to receive Balashëv in the same house in Vílna from which Alexander had sent Balashëv on his mission.

Quote from the chapter:

Thinking he could have been received in such a manner only because Davout did not know that he was adjutant general to the Emperor Alexander and even his envoy to Napoleon, Balashëv hastened to inform him of his rank and mission. Contrary to his expectation, Davout, after hearing him, became still surlier and ruder. "Where is your dispatch?" he inquired. "Give it to me. I will send it to the Emperor." Balashëv replied that he had been ordered to hand it personally to the Emperor. "Your Emperor's orders are obeyed in your army, but here," said Davout, "you must do as you're told." And, as if to make the Russian general still more conscious of his dependence on brute force, Davout sent an adjutant to call the officer on duty.

Book 9, Chapter 6

Napoleon blames the war on Russia, and recites his grievances.

Summary:

Balashëv is finally given an audience with Napoleon. At first, Napoleon says he does not want war with Russia, claiming it's been forced on him. He asks what are the conditions offered, and Balashëv says negotiations won't begin until the French withdraw to behind the Niemen. Napoleon says he could never agree to that. Napoleon then goes into his reasons for dissatisfaction with the

Russian government. He says that it was Alexander who first joined an army. He says the Russians are allied with other countries like England against the French. Napoleon becomes more and more animated. He will not allow Balashëv to speak. He accuses Russia of stirring up Prussia against France. He stresses that France has on her side rectitude and power. He exaggerates the strength of his allies, and how badly the first week of war has gone for Russia. Balashëv finally tries to counter by meekly saying France views things differently, but Napoleon does not appear to take him seriously . Finally, Napoleon ends the meeting by sending his regards to the Emperor. He will give Balashëv a letter for Alexander.

Quote from the chapter:

But who first joined his army? The Emperor Alexander, not I! And you offer me negotiations when I have expended millions, when you are in alliance with England, and when your position is a bad one. You offer me negotiations! But what is the aim of your alliance with England? What has she given you?" he continued hurriedly, evidently no longer trying to show the advantages of peace and discuss its possibility, but only to prove his own rectitude and power and Alexander's errors and duplicity. The commencement of his speech had obviously been made with the intention of demonstrating the advantages of his position and showing that he was nevertheless willing to negotiate. But he had begun talking, and the more he talked the less could he control his words. The whole purport of his remarks now was evidently to exalt himself and insult Alexander—just what he had least desired at the commencement of the interview.

Book 9, Chapter 7

Balashëv is invited to have dinner with Napoleon, who is a little friendlier than in the morning.

Summary:

Balashëv is asked to dine with Napoleon. This surprises Balashëv given the way Napoleon had spoken with him that morning. At dinner, Napoleon met Balashëv cheerfully. He placed Balashëv beside him. It seemed to Napoleon that everyone at the table adored him, including Balashëv! Napoleon seemed to have forgotten the hostile way he had spoken with Balashëv earlier that day. Now, he chatted about Russia in a friendly way. Any comments made by Balashëv, when he tried to diplomatically stand up for Russia, were ignored. After dinner, Napoleon's mood for some reason turned him back to his morning's anger, which was still fresh in him. For the remainder of the dinner, Napoleon spoke somewhat harshly to Balashëv about the war. Then Napoleon said goodbye to Balashëv and, offering him good horses for his journey, sent him back to Alexander. The letter taken by Balashëv was the last Napoleon sent to Alexander. Every detail of the interview was communicated to the Russian monarch, and the war began.

Quote from the chapter:

"Yes. Four days ago in this room, Wintzingerode and Stein were deliberating," continued Napoleon with the same derisive and self-confident smile. "What I can't understand," he went on, "is that the Emperor Alexander has surrounded himself with my personal enemies. That I do not... understand. Has he not thought that I may do the same?" and he turned inquiringly to Balashëv, and evidently this thought turned him back on to the track of his morning's anger, which was still fresh in him. "And let him know that I will do so!" said Napoleon, rising and pushing his cup away with his hand. "I'll drive all his Württemberg, Baden, and Weimar relations out of Germany.... Yes. I'll drive them out. Let him prepare an asylum for them in Russia!"

Book 9, Chapter 8

Prince Andrew rejoins the army, visits Bald Hills, and looks out for any opportunity to challenge Anatole to a duel.

Summary:

After his interview with Pierre, Prince Andrew left Moscow. He hoped to find Anatole wherever he was and make some excuse to challenge him to a duel. Andrew wants to work hard to cover up his lack of inner peace. He rejoins the army, and on his way there he visited Bald Hills. The situation at Bald Hills, Andrew finds, has gotten worse. The household had divided into two hostile factions, one with the Old Prince and Mademoiselle Bourienne, the other with Princess Mary and the staff who took her side. The Old Prince blamed Princess Mary for everything. When the old Prince tried to complain about the Princess to Andrew, Andrew stood up to his father for the first time in his life. He frankly told his father that, in Andrew's opinion, Mary was completely innocent and all the problems in the house were the fault of Mademoiselle Bourienne. The old Prince became angry, and told Andrew to get out of the house. Andrew left the next day. The Princess Mary realizes that Andrew wants to take revenges on Anatole and resents Mademoiselle Bourienne, and his spiritual sister urges Andrew to forgive and forget. Still, Andrew wants revenge.

Quote from the chapter:

"Good-by, Andrew! Remember that misfortunes come from God, and men are never to blame," were the last words he heard from his sister when he took leave of her. "Then it must be so!" thought Prince Andrew as he drove out of the avenue from the house at Bald Hills. "She, poor innocent creature, is left to be victimized by an old man who has outlived his wits. The old man feels he is guilty, but cannot change himself. My boy is growing up and rejoices in life, in which like everybody else he will deceive or be deceived. And I am off to the army. Why? I myself don't know. I want to meet that man whom I despise, so as to give him a chance to kill and laugh at me!" These conditions of life had been the same before, but then they were all connected, while now they had all tumbled to pieces. Only senseless things, lacking coherence, presented themselves one after another to Prince Andrew's mind.

Book 9, Chapter 9

Prince Andrew analyzes the internal politics of the Russian army at that time. The upper echelon of the army, it seems to Andrew, consists of nine internal factions all competing for control.

Summary:

When Andrew arrived at the army, he focused on trying to understand the army's internal politics, because Andrew knew from experience this is what really mattered. It seemed to Andrew that at that time there were actually nine internal factions vying for control of the army. The first seven of these were separate groups, often headed by influential individuals. Each of these groups had its own ideas about what ought to be done. For example, one group favored scientific military strategy, one favored putting a particular general in charge, and another group wanted a peace

treaty. The eighth group, by far the largest group, were individuals who were only in the army for themselves. They were mindless drones who got behind whatever idea seemed personally beneficial to them on that day. Finally, there was a ninth group of elders who realize that as currently organized the army is in bad shape. This ninth group, the elders, managed to convince Emperor Alexander to leave the army and go back to Moscow.

Quote from the chapter:

During the first four days, while no duties were required of him, Prince Andrew rode round the whole fortified camp and, by the aid of his own knowledge and by talks with experts, tried to form a definite opinion about it. But the question whether the camp was advantageous or disadvantageous remained for him undecided. Already from his military experience and what he had seen in the Austrian campaign, he had come to the conclusion that in war the most deeply considered plans have no significance and that all depends on the way unexpected movements of the enemy—that cannot be foreseen—are met, and on how and by whom the whole matter is handled. To clear up this last point for himself, Prince Andrew, utilizing his position and acquaintances, tried to fathom the character of the control of the army and of the men and parties engaged in it, and he deduced for himself the following of the state of affairs.

Book 9, Chapter 10

Prince Andrew is called in to see the Emperor, and while waiting sees an influential general and military theorist going in ahead of him.

Summary:

Andrew, summoned to brief the Emperor, happens to see General Pfuel. Pfuel is a German theorist who believes strongly that warfare can be reduced to a set of immutable laws—laws of oblique movements, outflankings, and so forth. These theorists so love their theory that they lose sight of the theory's object—its practical application. That morning Colonel Michaud had ridden round the Drissa fortifications with the Emperor and had pointed out to him that this fortified camp constructed by Pfuel, and till then considered a chef-d'oeuvre of tactical science which would ensure Napoleon's destruction, was an absurdity, threatening the destruction of the Russian army. Pfuel, always inclined to be irritably sarcastic, was particularly disturbed that day, evidently by the fact that anyone had dared to criticize his fortifications in his absence. Pfuel said a few words to Prince Andrew, with the air of a man who knows beforehand that all will go very wrong unless he gets his way.

Quote from the chapter:

In 1806 Pfuel had been one of those responsible, for the plan of campaign that ended in Jena and Auerstädt, but he did not see the least proof of the fallibility of his theory in the disasters of that war. On the contrary, the deviations made from his theory were, in his opinion, the sole cause of the whole disaster, and with characteristically gleeful sarcasm he would remark, "There, I said the whole affair would go to the devil!" Pfuel was one of those theoreticians who so love their theory that they lose sight of the theory's object—its practical application. His love of theory made him hate everything practical, and he would not listen to it. He was even pleased by failures, for failures resulting from deviations in practice from the theory only proved to him the accuracy of his theory.

Book 9, Chapter 11

Listening to the generals debate theoretical strategies at headquarters, Andrew decides he can be more useful at the front, so he requests a transfer.

Summary:

When Prince Andrew enters the room where the Emperor is, he finds a spirited debate going on between some of the Generals. The issue is whether or not Pfuel's defensive arrangements at Drissa are satisfactory. Several critics argue that Pfuel's arrangements are a disaster, that they will lead only to the army's destruction, and that Pfuel deserves to be sent to an asylum or to the gallows. Pfuel, for his part, thinks his critics are completely wrong. With a map, he tries to show them that his arrangements can survive any attacks the French may try. Listening to this, Andrew thinks how pointless such arguments are, since victory or defeat depends on the spirit of the men on the front and cannot be controlled by debating strategy in advance. Andrew decides to leave headquarters staff and to go and fight with the troops, so he requests a transfer. By doing so, Andrew loses some status in court circles.

Quote from the chapter:

Prince Andrew, listening to this polyglot talk and to these surmises, plans, refutations, and shouts, felt nothing but amazement at what they were saying. A thought that had long since and often occurred to him during his military activities—the idea that there is not and cannot be any science of war, and that therefore there can be no such thing as a military genius—now appeared to him an obvious truth. "What theory and science is possible about a matter the conditions and circumstances of which are unknown and cannot be defined, especially when the strength of the acting forces cannot be ascertained? No one was or is able to foresee in what condition our or the enemy's armies will be in a day's time, and no one can gauge the force of this or that detachment.

Book 9, Chapter 12

Nicholas remains on active duty with the army as a matter of honor, although the Rostóvs want him to retire. He misses Sónya.

Summary:

The Rostóv family again asks Nicholas to retire from the army, but Nicholas feels he can't do so with honor now that the army is at war. He writes Sónya, though, and tells her he dreams of his life with her after the war. The Russian army is falling back, destroying any provisions they cannot carry away. The retreating Russian troops also sometimes loot property from the local people. While there is tremendous angst in headquarters, the troops on the ground, try not to think about the big picture. The rains were heavy that year. Rostóv's squadron is sometimes a bit difficult to control. Rostóv is told a tall tale about a Russian act of heroism in battle. Nicholas, now seasoned in military life, says nothing although the story sounds improbable to him. A young subordinate of Rostóv's named Ilyín finds a tavern nearby, where the two go to escape the wet of their leaky shelter.

Quote from the chapter:

The troops retired from Vílna for various complicated reasons of state, political and strategic. Each step of the retreat was accompanied by a complicated interplay of interests, arguments, and passions at headquarters. For the Pávlograd hussars, however, the whole of this retreat during the finest period of summer and with sufficient supplies was a very simple and agreeable business. It was only at headquarters that there was depression, uneasiness, and intriguing; in the body of the army they did not ask themselves where they were going or why. If they regretted having to retreat, it was only because they had to leave billets they had grown accustomed to, or some pretty young Polish lady. If the thought that things looked bad chanced to enter anyone's head, he tried to be as cheerful as befits a good soldier and not to think of the general trend of affairs, but only of the task nearest to hand.

Book 9, Chapter 13

Nicholas and Ilyín visit the makeshift tavern of Mary Hendríkhovna and her husband the doctor.

Summary:

Nicholas and Ilyín go to the makeshift tavern being run by Mary Hendríkhovna and her husband the doctor. Rostóv and Ilyín, on entering, are welcomed with merry shouts and laughter. Its still raining outside. The tavern is crowded, but Rostóv and Ilyín manage to change out of their wet clothes. Other soldiers are present, some playing cards. A board was covered with a horsecloth, a small samovar was produced and a cellaret and half a bottle of rum, and having asked Mary Hendríkhovna to preside, they all crowded round her. Despite the impoverished setting, they have tea, laughing and joking with the lady in a mildly flirtatious way, trying not to wake up the doctor. They ask Mary to stir their tea with her finger. When the doctor awakes, he seems not amused, and he tells his wife they need to go to their covered cart to sleep. The soldiers remain in the tavern and try to sleep. At least, the tavern is dry, unlike their own quarters. But Nicholas can't fall asleep.

Quote from the chapter:

Leave him alone," said Mary Hendríkhovna, smiling timidly and happily. "He is sleeping well as it is, after a sleepless night." "Oh, no, Mary Hendríkhovna," replied the officer, "one must look after the doctor. Perhaps he'll take pity on me someday, when it comes to cutting off a leg or an arm for me." There were only three tumblers, the water was so muddy that one could not make out whether the tea was strong or weak, and the samovar held only six tumblers of water, but this made it all the pleasanter to take turns in order of seniority to receive one's tumbler from Mary Hendríkhovna's plump little hands with their short and not overclean nails. All the officers appeared to be, and really were, in love with her that evening. Even those playing cards behind the partition soon left their game and came over to the samovar, yielding to the general mood of courting Mary Hendríkhovna.

Book 9, Chapter 14

In the middle of the night, Nicholas' unit is ordered to march to Ostróvna for a battle.

Summary:

It was nearly three o'clock but no one was yet asleep, when the quartermaster appeared with an order to move on to the little town of Ostróvna. Half an hour later, Nicholas' squadron was lined up on the road, and soon they were marching. Their clothes have not yet dried out from yesterday's rain. Nicholas is not afraid. By this point, Nicholas has grown used to being under fire (one cannot grow used to danger), but he has learned how to manage his thoughts. He knows not to think about the coming fighting. Young Ilyín, however, is scared. Rostóv knew from experience the terror and death the cornet Ilyín was suffering and knew that only time could help him. As they drew closer to the fighting, they see the Russian army arrayed around the battlefield. At these sounds, long unheard, Rostóv's spirits rose. Rostóv's unit is ordered closer. Then they are ordered to wait. The Russian cavalry is ordered to advance into battle, but they soon return, with the French cavalry in pursuit at their heels.

Quote from the chapter:

As soon as the Uhlans descended the hill, the hussars were ordered up the hill to support the battery. As they took the places vacated by the Uhlans, bullets came from the front, whining and whistling, but fell spent without taking effect. The sounds, which he had not heard for so long, had an even more pleasurable and exhilarating effect on Rostóv than the previous sounds of firing. Drawing himself up, he viewed the field of battle opening out before him from the hill, and with his whole soul followed the movement of the Uhlans. They swooped down close to the French dragoons, something confused happened there amid the smoke, and five minutes later our Uhlans were galloping back, not to the place they had occupied but more to the left, and among the orange-colored Uhlans on chestnut horses and behind them, in a large group, blue French dragoons on gray horses could be seen.

Book 9, Chapter 15

Nicholas attacks without orders, nearly kills a Frenchman face to face, and then wonders why he is doing this.

Summary:

Seeing before him the disorderly crowds of Uhlans and the French, Nicholas realizes its the perfect moment for his unit to attack. He felt instinctively that if the hussars struck at the French dragoons now, the latter could not withstand them. If a charge was to be made at this very minute, they could crush the French attack. Without orders, Nicholas leads his squadron into the frey. The French quickly turn tail and retreat in chaos. Nicholas knocks a fleeing French officer to the ground. The French officer, terrified of being killed, quickly surrenders to Nicholas. Nicholas experiences a moment of confusion. Why should I kill him? he asks himself. Later on, Nicholas is afraid of being reprimanded for attacking without orders. On the contrary, he is awarded the St. George's Cross for bravery and promoted. But the thought of being about to kill that young French officer leaves Nicholas questioning his own notion of heroism.

Quote from the chapter:

Rostóv himself did not know how or why he did it. He acted as he did when hunting, without reflecting or considering. He saw the dragoons near and that they were galloping in disorder; he knew they could not withstand an attack—knew there was only that moment and that if he let it slip it would not return. The bullets were whining and whistling so stimulatingly around him and his horse was so eager to go that he could not restrain himself. He touched his horse, gave the word of command, and immediately, hearing behind him the tramp of the horses of his deployed

squadron, rode at full trot downhill toward the dragoons. Hardly had they reached the bottom of the hill before their pace instinctively changed to a gallop, which grew faster and faster as they drew nearer to our Uhlans and the French dragoons who galloped after them.

Book 9, Chapter 16

Natásha is ill through the Summer. She is treated by ineffectual doctors.

Summary:

On receiving news of Natásha's illness, the countess went to Moscow with Pétya and the rest of the household, and the whole family settled into their Moscow house. Natásha was so ill that it was impossible for the family to consider in how far she was to blame for what had happened. She could not eat or sleep, grew visibly thinner, coughed, and, as the doctors made them feel, was in danger. They could not think of anything but how to help her. Doctors were called in. Tolstoy, we learn, is very skeptical of doctors' ability to physically cure anyone. Rather, he says, they merely satisfy the human need to feel something is being done. So, while the doctors and medicines used for Natásha had no physical benefit, their mere presence was a great comfort to Natásha and her family. The symptoms of Natásha's illness were that she ate little, slept little, coughed, and was always low-spirited, and had to remain in Moscow over the Summer. Eventually, however, Natásha's youth won out. Her grief began to be overlaid by the impressions of daily life, ceased to press so painfully on her heart, gradually faded into the past, and Natásha began to recover physically.

Quote from the chapter:

Their usefulness did not depend on making the patient swallow substances for the most part harmful (the harm was scarcely perceptible, as they were given in small doses), but they were useful, necessary, and indispensable because they satisfied a mental need of the invalid and of those who loved her—and that is why there are, and always will be, pseudo-healers, wise women, homeopaths, and allopaths. They satisfied that eternal human need for hope of relief, for sympathy, and that something should be done, which is felt by those who are suffering.

Book 9, Chapter 17

After her illness, nothing seems to give Natásha any joy. She finds comfort in talking to Pierre. She decides to take holy communion at church, which uplifts her spirits.

Summary:

Recovered from her illness, Natásha's life remains joyless. She derives no pleasure from any activities, such as singing and the theatre, which she used to very much enjoy. There was no joy in life, but her life was passing. She only felt at ease with her brother Pétya. Also, she enjoyed visits from Pierre, but attaches no significance to them. She assumes that Pierre is simply always nice to everyone. Someone suggests that Natásha fast and prepare for Holy Communion, which at that time meant church every day for a week and not once missing Vespers, Matins, or Mass. Natásha gladly welcomed the idea and seriously undertook the preparation for communion. This ritual seemed to help Natásha a lot. After taking communion, Natásha experienced a feeling new to her,

a sense of the possibility of correcting her faults, the possibility of a new, clean life, and of happiness. Ironically, her doctor takes the credit for her improved condition.

Quote from the chapter:

Before the end of the fast of St. Peter, Agraféna Ivánovna Belóva, a country neighbor of the Rostóvs, came to Moscow to pay her devotions at the shrines of the Moscow saints. She suggested that Natásha should fast and prepare for Holy Communion, and Natásha gladly welcomed the idea. Despite the doctor's orders that she should not go out early in the morning, Natásha insisted on fasting and preparing for the sacrament, not as they generally prepared for it in the Rostóv family by attending three services in their own house, but as Agraféna Ivánovna did, by going to church every day for a week and not once missing Vespers, Matins, or Mass. The countess was pleased with Natásha's zeal; after the poor results of the medical treatment, in the depths of her heart she hoped that prayer might help her daughter more than medicines and, though not without fear and concealing it from the doctor, she agreed to Natásha's wish

Book 9, Chapter 18

The war news is disquieting. At church, Natásha prays for forgiveness and for the deliverance of Russia.

Summary:

At the beginning of July more and more disquieting reports about the war circulate in Moscow. People were saying that only a miracle could save Russia. On Sunday, the Rostóvs went to Mass as usual. As she walks to church, Natásha feels emotionally sunk, judged, judgmental, vexed. She thinks everyone is talking about her, and that her best years are passing her by. In church, she prays "Teach me what I should do, how to live my life, how I may grow good forever, forever!" She prays for many people. All of this brings her comfort. The priest reads to the congregation a long prayer from the Synod asking God for the deliverance of Russia from hostile invasion. It seemed to her that God heard her prayer.

Quote from the chapter:

When he had finished the Litany the deacon crossed the stole over his breast and said, "Let us commit ourselves and our whole lives to Christ the Lord!" "Commit ourselves to God," Natásha inwardly repeated. "Lord God, I submit myself to Thy will!" she thought. "I want nothing, wish for nothing; teach me what to do and how to use my will! Take me, take me!" prayed Natásha, with impatient emotion in her heart, not crossing herself but letting her slender arms hang down as if expecting some invisible power at any moment to take her and deliver her from herself, from her regrets, desires, remorse, hopes, and sins. The countess looked round several times at her daughter's softened face and shining eyes and prayed God to help her.

Book 9, Chapter 19

Pierre is secretly in love with Natásha. He dabbles with numerology, somehow convincing himself he is destined for a great place in history.

Summary:

From the day he saw the comet, Natásha's beloved image is always in Pierre's mind. His conception of her transferred him instantly to another, a brighter, realm of spiritual activity, a realm of beauty and love which he lived for. Her image drove all worries from his mind. When a brother Mason shows Pierre how numerology reveals Napoleon equals 666, i.e. the beast of the Book of Revelations, he begins playing with numerology and by manipulating the spelling of his name he somehow convinces himself he is predestined to play a major part in the great affair of setting a limit to the power of the beast Napoleon. Therefore, instead of joining the army, Pierre decides he ought to stay put and await hid destiny.

Quote from the chapter:

So he wrote Le russe Besuhof and adding up the numbers got 671. This was only five too much, and five was represented by e, the very letter elided from the article le before the word Empereur. By omitting the e, though incorrectly, Pierre got the answer he sought. L'russe Besuhof made 666. This discovery excited him. How, or by what means, he was connected with the great event foretold in the Apocalypse he did not know, but he did not doubt that connection for a moment. His love for Natásha, Antichrist, Napoleon, the invasion, the comet, 666, L'Empereur Napoléon, and L'russe Besuhof—all this had to mature and culminate, to lift him out of that spellbound, petty sphere of Moscow habits in which he felt himself held captive and lead him to a great achievement and great happiness

Book 9, Chapter 20

Pierre, finding it increasingly difficult to conceal his affection for Natásha, decides he must stop visiting the Rostóvs.

Summary:

On Sunday, Pierre went to dine with the Rostóvs, expecting to stay until midnight as was his custom. Her depression abating, Natásha has begun singing again. At dinner, the family toasts Nicholas' promotion and discusses the war. With the Russian army in continual retreat, it is becoming dangerous to speak French in the streets. After dinner, Sónya is asked to read the Tsar's appeal to the people. Pétya wants to join the hussars, but his parents think him too young. Natásha, unconscious of Pierre's romantic feelings for her, continually shows him a great deal of affection and appreciation. Pierre is more and more conscious of how attractive she is, and part of him wants to declare his love for her. Agitated by his feelings, Pierre makes an excuse to leave early and decides he needs to stop visiting the Rostóv house.

Quote from the chapter:

You don't often come nowadays as it is, and this girl of mine," said the count good-naturedly, pointing to Natásha, "only brightens up when you're here." "Yes, I had forgotten... I really must go home... business..." said Pierre hurriedly. "Well, then, au revoir!" said the count, and went out of the room. "Why are you going? Why are you upset?" asked Natásha, and she looked challengingly into Pierre's eyes. "Because I love you!" was what he wanted to say, but he did not say it, and only blushed till the tears came, and lowered his eyes. "Because it is better for me to come less often... because... No, simply I have business...." "Why? No, tell me!" Natásha began resolutely and suddenly stopped. They looked at each other with dismayed and embarrassed faces. He tried to smile but could not: his smile expressed suffering, and he silently kissed her hand and went out. Pierre made up his mind not to go to the Rostóvs' any more.

Book 9, Chapter 21

Pétya, having tried and failed to speak with the Emperor, returns home and insists he be permitted to join the army. Reluctantly, his parents agree.

Summary:

The Emperor is in Moscow and will be appearing in public. Pétya, very upset at his parents' not permitting him to join the army, goes to where the Emperor will be. But the crowd outside is huge, and getting nearer to the Emperor, Pétya is crushed by the mob and faints. A bystander helps revive him. Pétya gives up any hope of talking to the Emperor, but remains with the crowd all day on the slight hope the Emperor may appear again in public. Returning home that night, he tells his parents he will run away unless they permit him to join the army. Reluctantly, Count Rostóv yields and begins to look for the safest place for his young son to serve in the army.

Quote from the chapter:

"So this is what the Emperor is!" thought Pétya. "No, I can't petition him myself—that would be too bold." But in spite of this he continued to struggle desperately forward, and from between the backs of those in front he caught glimpses of an open space with a strip of red cloth spread out on it; but just then the crowd swayed back—the police in front were pushing back those who had pressed too close to the procession: the Emperor was passing from the palace to the Cathedral of the Assumption—and Pétya unexpectedly received such a blow on his side and ribs and was squeezed so hard that suddenly everything grew dim before his eyes and he lost consciousness. When he came to himself, a man of clerical appearance with a tuft of gray hair at the back of his head and wearing a shabby blue cassock—probably a church clerk and chanter—was holding him under the arm with one hand while warding off the pressure of the crowd with the other.

Book 9, Chapter 22

The wealthy men of Moscow gather to await their meeting with the Emperor. They disagree on what they ought to say to him.

Summary:

The Emperor has come to Moscow to consult with his people on the war. Moscow's leading men, the nobility, gentry and wealthy merchants, have gathered at the Slobóda Palace to await the Emperor's arrival. Pierre is in the hall with the other nobility. The men, dressed in their uniforms, move around the room chatting and discussing what should be done. Debate breaks out on whether the Emperor is asking for their advice, or whether he merely wants their financial support. Pierre tries to join the debate, saying the Emperor should report to them on the state of the war, but no one listens. Various comments are made by others in the hall, and occasionally the arguments become heated.

Quote from the chapter:

"Yes, and this is not a time for discussing," he continued, "but for acting: there is war in Russia! The enemy is advancing to destroy Russia, to desecrate the tombs of our fathers, to carry off our wives and children." The nobleman smote his breast. "We will all arise, everyone of us will go,

for our father the Tsar!" he shouted, rolling his bloodshot eyes. Several approving voices were heard in the crowd. "We are Russians and will not grudge our blood in defense of our faith, the throne, and the Fatherland! We must cease raving if we are sons of our Fatherland! We will show Europe how Russia rises to the defense of Russia!"

Book 9, Chapter 23

The leading men of Moscow very willingly agree to contribute. The nobility will provide many serfs for the war. The wealthy merchants will give millions of rubles.

Summary:

Just prior to the Emperor's arrival, Count Rostopchín comes into the hall and tells the nobility what is wanted from them. He says "The Emperor has deigned to summon us and the merchants. Millions will pour forth from there"—he pointed to the merchants' hall—"but our business is to supply men and not spare ourselves.... That is the least we can do!" Everyone patriotically agrees, without reservation or argument, to give the Emperor what he asks for. The Emperor is moved by emotion. Pierre now felt ashamed for earlier implying the Emperor owed them a report on the state of the war.

Quote from the chapter:

Pierre wished to say that he was ready to sacrifice his money, his serfs, or himself, only one ought to know the state of affairs in order to be able to improve it, but he was unable to speak. Many voices shouted and talked at the same time, so that Count Rostóv had not time to signify his approval of them all, and the group increased, dispersed, re-formed, and then moved with a hum of talk into the largest hall and to the big table. Not only was Pierre's attempt to speak unsuccessful, but he was rudely interrupted, pushed aside, and people turned away from him as from a common enemy. This happened not because they were displeased by the substance of his speech, which had even been forgotten after the many subsequent speeches, but to animate it the crowd needed a tangible object to love and a tangible object to hate. Pierre became the latter.

Book 10, Chapter 1

Tolstoy reminds us the war had no cause in the conventional sense of the word.

Summary:

Returning to what caused the war, Tolstoy again points out that everyone's actions during the war were compelled by innumerable personal characteristics, habits, situations, psychologies, and egos. There was no big plan everyone was working towards. The participants didn't even possess the freedom or understanding which would have been necessary to collectively execute a big plan. In fact, the people really high up in the social hierarchy had even less freedom of action than people of low social status. Tolstoy cites many examples of this. It's only when we look back on it later that we make up a story to explain what happened, but this is merely a fabrication made in hindsight. For example, people today like to say that Russia cleverly allowed Napoleon to go far into Russia. But in fact, at the time, this was the last thing the Russians wanted.

Quote from the chapter:

Alexander refused negotiations because he felt himself to be personally insulted. Barclay de Tolly tried to command the army in the best way, because he wished to fulfill his duty and earn fame as a great commander. Rostóv charged the French because he could not restrain his wish for a gallop across a level field; and in the same way the innumerable people who took part in the war acted in accord with their personal characteristics, habits, circumstances, and aims. They were moved by fear or vanity, rejoiced or were indignant, reasoned, imagining that they knew what they were doing and did it of their own free will, but they all were involuntary tools of history, carrying on a work concealed from them but comprehensible to us. Such is the inevitable fate of men of action, and the higher they stand in the social hierarchy the less are they free. The actors of 1812 have long since left the stage, their personal interests have vanished leaving no trace, and nothing remains of that time but its historic results.

Book 10, Chapter 2

The old Prince becomes even more difficult to live with, and he seems in denial about the approach of Napoleon's army.

Summary:

The day after Prince Andrew left, the old Prince cruelly blamed and taunted Princess Mary, claiming the problem with Andrew was all her fault. He broke off his relations with Mademoiselle Bourienne, again blaming Mary. After being ill for a week, he kept to himself and focused on his building projects on the estate. Meanwhile, Princess Mary continued to follow her normal household routine. Little news about the war reached Princess Mary, and consequently she did not understand what was happening. Andrew wrote a conciliatory letter to his father, and also urged him to go to Moscow since Bald Hills was close to the fighting. The old Prince did not take Andrew's advice to move, and in fact seemed confused if not disoriented concerning the current state of the war and Prince Andrew's warnings that he should go to Moscow for safety.

Quote from the chapter:

“Well? Are you satisfied now?” said he. “You’ve made me quarrel with my son! Satisfied, are you? That’s all you wanted! Satisfied?... It hurts me, it hurts. I’m old and weak and this is what you wanted. Well then, gloat over it! Gloat over it!” After that Princess Mary did not see her father for a whole week. He was ill and did not leave his study. Princess Mary noticed to her surprise that during this illness the old prince not only excluded her from his room, but did not admit Mademoiselle Bourienne either. Tíkhon alone attended him. At the end of the week the prince reappeared and resumed his former way of life, devoting himself with special activity to building operations and the arrangement of the gardens and completely breaking off his relations with Mademoiselle Bourienne.

Book 10, Chapter 3

On a now typical evening, the old Prince tries to get to sleep. Strangely, he sets up his bed in a different spot in the house every night. He is not thinking clearly.

Summary:

The old Prince tries to go to sleep in the evening. He sat at his bureau reading his "Remarks", a manuscript which was to be transmitted to the Emperor after his death. Then, he spent two hours instructing a servant he planned to send to Smolénsk on errands. Then, he composed a letter to the Governor, and began to look for a spot to set up his bed for the night. Strangely, he sets up his bed in a different spot in the house every night, hoping to find somewhere he can go to sleep without having depressing thoughts. That evening, he puts his bed behind the piano. He undresses with the help of a servant and tries to sleep, seeming to wish he were already dead. He falls asleep, but soon wakes up abruptly and remembers he needs to read the letter he got that day from Andrew. Only momentarily does he grasp what Andrew is saying about Napoleon's approach, and then his mind aimlessly drifts back to some random events of his youth.

Quote from the chapter:

Only now in the stillness of the night, reading it by the faint light under the green shade, did he grasp its meaning for a moment. "The French at Vítebsk, in four days' march they may be at Smolénsk; perhaps are already there! Tíkhon!" Tíkhon jumped up. "No, no, I don't want anything!" he shouted. He put the letter under the candlestick and closed his eyes. And there rose before him the Danube at bright noonday: reeds, the Russian camp, and himself a young general without a wrinkle on his ruddy face, vigorous and alert, entering Potëmkin's gaily colored tent, and a burning sense of jealousy of "the favorite" agitated him now as strongly as it had done then.

Book 10, Chapter 4

Having not heeded Andrew's earlier advice to evacuate to Moscow, the family is still at Bald Hills when the French attack the nearby town of Smolénsk.

Summary:

Worried the old Prince is careless of their safety, the household tutor requests Mary ask advice of the Governor. Mary's letter will be carried by a senior servant named Alpátych, who the Old Prince is sending on errands to Smolénsk. On the road, Alpátych sees people and soldiers moving everywhere. In Smolénsk, many citizens are evacuating. The Governor tells Alpátych Bald Hills is no longer safe, and they need to go to Moscow at once. Before Alpátych can leave town with his purchases, the French begin bombarding the city. There is massive confusion. Buildings are set afire. The Russian army is trying, apparently without success, to stop Napoleon outside the city. Alpátych runs into Prince Andrew, and Andrew sends with him a note for Princess Mary that the household must evacuate Bald Hills and go to Moscow at once. Napoleon may reach Bald HIlls in a few days.

Quote from the chapter:

Prince Andrew in his riding cloak, mounted on a black horse, was looking at Alpátych from the back of the crowd. "Why are you here?" he asked. "Your... your excellency," stammered Alpátych and broke into sobs. "Are we really lost? Master!..." "Why are you here?" Prince Andrew repeated. At that moment the flames flared up and showed his young master's pale worn face. Alpátych told how he had been sent there and how difficult it was to get away. "Are we really quite lost, your excellency?" he asked again. Prince Andrew without replying took out a notebook and raising his knee began writing in pencil on a page he tore out. He wrote to his sister: "Smolénsk is being abandoned. Bald Hills will be occupied by the enemy within a week. Set off immediately for Moscow.

Book 10, Chapter 5

The Russians abandon Smolénsk and continue their retreat.

Summary:

Smolénsk is set fire and abandoned by the Russians. The Russians continue to retreat, marching towards Moscow on the incredibly hot and dusty road. Passing nearby, Andrew leaves his regiment to make a quick inspection of his family estate. Tolstoy describes in some detail in this chapter the unpleasant conditions on the road and at the estate. Andrew finds Bald Hills ransacked and in disorder, only a few serfs remaining. The loyal and pious Alpátych, totally distraught, tells Andrew is family has departed. Andrew mistakenly assumes they went to Moscow. Andrew rejoins his retreating regiment. In a letter meant for the Emperor, Prince Bagratión complains he should be in charge of the army and that they could have held Smolénsk and stopped the French there.

Quote from the chapter:

As soon as day dawned the march began. The artillery and baggage wagons moved noiselessly through the deep dust that rose to the very hubs of the wheels, and the infantry sank ankle-deep in that soft, choking, hot dust that never cooled even at night. Some of this dust was kneaded by the feet and wheels, while the rest rose and hung like a cloud over the troops, settling in eyes, ears, hair, and nostrils, and worst of all in the lungs of the men and beasts as they moved along that road. The higher the sun rose the higher rose that cloud of dust, and through the screen of its hot fine particles one could look with naked eye at the sun, which showed like a huge crimson ball in the unclouded sky. There was no wind, and the men choked in that motionless atmosphere. They marched with handkerchiefs tied over their noses and mouths. When they passed through a village they all rushed to the wells and fought for the water and drank it down to the mud.

Book 10, Chapter 6

The Petersburg salons continue as previously with little change.

Summary:

Kutúzov is put in charge of the army. Since 1805 Russia had both made peace and quarreled with Bonaparte and made and unmade constitutions. But the Petersburg salons of Anna Pávlovna and Hélène never seemed to change. Anna's was still very anti-French, while Hélène's sympathized with the French. To resolve the problem of divided military leadership, the Emperor gave Kutúzov full powers over all the armies. Vasíli previously thought Kutúzov, because of his age and infirmity, was unfit to lead the army. But once he is promoted to field marshal, Vasíli becomes a big Kutúzov supporter, only because Vasíli thinks being a Kutúzov supporter is now the smart political thing to do.

Quote from the chapter:

on the twenty-ninth of July Kutúzov received the title of Prince. This might indicate a wish to get rid of him, and therefore Prince Vasíli's opinion continued to be correct though he was not now in any hurry to express it. But on the eighth of August a committee, consisting of Field Marshal

Saltykóv, Arakchéev, Vyazmítinov, Lopukhín, and Kochubéy met to consider the progress of the war. This committee came to the conclusion that our failures were due to a want of unity in the command and though the members of the committee were aware of the Emperor's dislike of Kutúzov, after a short deliberation they agreed to advise his appointment as commander in chief. That same day Kutúzov was appointed commander in chief with full powers over the armies and over the whole region occupied by them.

Book 10, Chapter 7

Napoleon interviews a captured Russian serf.

Summary:

Napoleon interviews a captured Russian serf named Lavrúshka who is attached to Nicholas. Lavrúshka pretends not to recognize Napoleon, but willingly tells him all the gossip he had heard among the orderlies, much of it true. Napoleon then asked Lavrúshka whether the Russians thought they would beat the French or not. Lavrúshka answers that "If a battle takes place within the next three days the French will win, but if later, God knows what will happen." Napoleon is amused by Lavrúshka's response, makes Lavrúshka a present and has him set free. Lavrúshka returns to Count Rostóv. Nicholas lets Lavrúshka accompany him on a ride round the neighboring villages.

Quote from the chapter:

Lavrúshka was one of those coarse, bare-faced lackeys who have seen all sorts of things, consider it necessary to do everything in a mean and cunning way, are ready to render any sort of service to their master, and are keen at guessing their master's baser impulses, especially those prompted by vanity and pettiness. Finding himself in the company of Napoleon, whose identity he had easily and surely recognized, Lavrúshka was not in the least abashed but merely did his utmost to gain his new master's favor. He knew very well that this was Napoleon, but Napoleon's presence could no more intimidate him than Rostóv's, or a sergeant major's with the rods, would have done, for he had nothing that either the sergeant major or Napoleon could deprive him of.

Book 10, Chapter 8

The old Prince has a stroke and dies after three weeks.

Summary:

The old prince's mind cleared. He began to prepare for the arrival of the French. He ordered the princess, his grandson and Dessalles to go to Moscow. Then, he prepared to defend Bald Hills to the death. Mary refused to go away, but the others left for Moscow. For her refusal to leave, her father's fury broke over her in a terrible storm, although she suspected he was glad she had not gone away. On the following morning, the old Prince suffered a seizure paralyzing his right side. The next day they moved the prince to Boguchárovo, Andrew's nearby estate, thinking it safer. There the old Prince lay unconscious for three weeks. He was suffering both physically and mentally. Mary began to think it would be better if he just died, and then she felt guilty for thinking this. At one point, the old Prince began to recover his consciousness, and he seemed to

ask Mary's forgiveness. The authorities told Mary they could remain there no longer, and must go to Moscow. But before they were able to depart for Moscow the old Prince passed away.

Quote from the chapter:

All the force of the tenderness she had been feeling for him vanished instantly and was replaced by a feeling of horror at what lay there before her. "No, he is no more! He is not, but here where he was is something unfamiliar and hostile, some dreadful, terrifying, and repellent mystery!" And hiding her face in her hands, Princess Mary sank into the arms of the doctor, who held her up. In the presence of Tíkhon and the doctor the women washed what had been the prince, tied his head up with a handkerchief that the mouth should not stiffen while open, and with another handkerchief tied together the legs that were already spreading apart. Then they dressed him in uniform with his decorations and placed his shriveled little body on a table. Heaven only knows who arranged all this and when, but it all got done as if of its own accord. Toward night candles were burning round his coffin, a pall was spread over it, the floor was strewn with sprays of juniper, a printed band was tucked in under his shriveled head, and in a corner of the room sat a chanter reading the psalms.

Book 10, Chapter 9

The Boguchárovo peasants refuse to help with Mary's move to Moscow.

Summary:

The peasants at Boguchárovo were formerly owned by absentee landlords. Called steppe peasants, they were different from the other serfs in speech, dress, and disposition. Although they worked hard, they could be quite difficult to deal with. Prince Andrew's reform efforts only made them harder to manage. They were habitually distrustful of the owners, spread false rumors, and they were sometimes insubordinate. In 1812, these undercurrents were nearing an eruption. The Boguchárovo serfs seemed to be eagerly anticipating the arrival the French. When asked to help to move the princess' belongings from Boguchárovo, they refused. About this refusal to cooperate, Alpátych went to confront the leader of the Boguchárovo serfs, who was named Dron. Alpátych, a seasoned manager, did his best to pressure Dron into compliance. Dron, caught between the peasants and the masters, did nothing. In the end, Alpátych has to find other conveyances for the household and summon the police to deal with this rebellious group of peasants.

Quote from the chapter:

"Well, then, listen! I'll go to the police officer, and you tell them so, and that they must stop this and the carts must be got ready." "I understand." Alpátych did not insist further. He had managed people for a long time and knew that the chief way to make them obey is to show no suspicion that they can possibly disobey. Having wrung a submissive "I understand" from Dron, Alpátych contented himself with that, though he not only doubted but felt almost certain that without the help of troops the carts would not be forthcoming. And so it was, for when evening came no carts had been provided. In the village, outside the drink shop, another meeting was being held, which decided that the horses should be driven out into the woods and the carts should not be provided. Without saying anything of this to the princess, Alpátych had his own belongings taken out of the carts which had arrived from Bald Hills and had those horses got ready for the princess' carriages. Meanwhile he went himself to the police authorities.

Book 10, Chapter 10

After she recovers from her false guilt over her father's death, Mary looks for a way to flee from the French, and offers Andrew's grain to the starving peasants.

Summary:

Mary shut herself up in her room and did not admit anyone after her father's funeral. A maid came to the door to say that Alpátych was asking for orders about their departure. (This was before his talk with Dron.) At that point, Mary did not mean to go away and begged to be left in peace. Mademoiselle Bourienne comes to her and suggests they stay put, but the idea of being captured by the French is repulsive to Mary. Mary rejects Mademoiselle Bourienne's advice, and decides she must leave at once. Alpátych is away, and there seems to be no one who can help her. But then, Dron comes to see her and she asks him for horses. Dron says there are no horses, and that the peasants are starving. Apparently surprised to learn this, Mary tells Dron to give Andrew's grain to whoever needs it. Motivated only by her desire to help, Mary asks Dron for nothing in return.

Quote from the chapter:

"They, the French, would settle in this house: M. le Général Rameau would occupy Prince Andrew's study and amuse himself by looking through and reading his letters and papers. Mademoiselle Bourienne would do the honors of Boguchárovo for him. I should be given a small room as a favor, the soldiers would violate my father's newly dug grave to steal his crosses and stars, they would tell me of their victories over the Russians, and would pretend to sympathize with my sorrow..." thought Princess Mary, not thinking her own thoughts but feeling bound to think like her father and her brother. For herself she did not care where she remained or what happened to her, but she felt herself the representative of her dead father and of Prince Andrew. Involuntarily she thought their thoughts and felt their feelings. What they would have said and what they would have done she felt bound to say and do. She went into Prince Andrew's study, trying to enter completely into his ideas, and considered her position.

Book 10, Chapter 11

The distrustful peasants of Boguchárovo refuse Mary's gift of grain.

Summary:

An hour after Mary told Dron to give Andrew's grain to whoever needed it, all the peasants had assembled outside and wished to have a word with her. Apparently, they think she has called for them to assemble. Also, they believe she is ordering them to leave. She goes and talks to them. They seem reluctant to speak, but Mary tells them she is not ordering them to leave. In addition, she says if they go to the Moscow estate, she will continue to provide for them, and that 'All that is mine is yours. They say they don't want the grain, but they will not directly tell Mary their reason for refusing it. They looked angry, and appeared to think Mary was ordering them to leave against their will. Someone says Mary is trying to lure them into bondage. Eventually, Mary gives up and goes back into the house.

Quote from the chapter:

And again all the faces in that crowd bore an identical expression, though now it was certainly not an expression of curiosity or gratitude, but of angry resolve. "But you can't have understood me," said Princess Mary with a sad smile. "Why don't you want to go? I promise to house and feed you, while here the enemy would ruin you...." But her voice was drowned by the voices of the crowd. "We're not willing. Let them ruin us! We won't take your grain. We don't agree." Again Princess Mary tried to catch someone's eye, but not a single eye in the crowd was turned to her; evidently they were all trying to avoid her look. She felt strange and awkward. "Oh yes, an artful tale! Follow her into slavery! Pull down your houses and go into bondage! I dare say! 'I'll give you grain, indeed!' she says," voices in the crowd were heard saying. With drooping head Princess Mary left the crowd and went back to the house.

Book 10, Chapter 12

Mary tearfully recalls her father's last days.

Summary:

For a long time that evening Mary sat in her room thinking about her sorrows, which, after the break caused by the day's cares, seemed already to belong to the past. Now she could remember them and weep or pray. With mournful pleasure she lingered over her mental images of her father's stroke and last moments. These mental pictures rose one after another to her memory, repelling with horror only the last one, the picture of his death. Mary wishes she would have gone into his sickroom to see him sooner, that had she done so perhaps he might have sooner expressed his love for her. These sad thoughts overwhelm Mary, and sobbing she cries out for her maid.

Quote from the chapter:

From behind the door I heard how he lay down on his bed groaning and loudly exclaimed, 'My God!' Why didn't I go in then? What could he have done to me? What could I have lost? And perhaps he would then have been comforted and would have said that word to me." And Princess Mary uttered aloud the caressing word he had said to her on the day of his death. "Dear-est!" she repeated, and began sobbing, with tears that relieved her soul. She now saw his face before her. And not the face she had known ever since she could remember and had always seen at a distance, but the timid, feeble face she had seen for the first time quite closely, with all its wrinkles and details, when she stooped near to his mouth to catch what he said. "Dear-est!" she repeated again.

Book 10, Chapter 13

The peasants tell Mary she cannot leave Boguchárovo, but Nicholas happens to arrive and offers to escort her away.

Summary:

The following day, Nicholas, Ilyín, and Lavrúshka happen to arrive at Boguchárovo. Nicholas is unaware that this estate belonged to the same Bolkónski who was engaged to his sister Natásha. They are only there to seize any available provisions before the French arrive. Upon arriving, they learn the peasants are not permitting Mary to leave the village. Although the carts are loaded for

Mary's departure, the peasants have unharnessed the horses. Learning of this situation, Nicholas immediately offers to escort her away.

Quote from the chapter:

"I make bold to inform your honor that the rude peasants here don't wish to let the mistress leave the estate, and threaten to unharness her horses, so that though everything has been packed up since morning, her excellency cannot get away." "Impossible!" exclaimed Rostóv. "I have the honor to report to you the actual truth," said Alpátych. Rostóv dismounted, gave his horse to the orderly, and followed Alpátych to the house, questioning him as to the state of affairs. It appeared that the princess' offer of corn to the peasants the previous day, and her talk with Dron and at the meeting, had actually had so bad an effect that Dron had finally given up the keys and joined the peasants and had not appeared when Alpátych sent for him; and that in the morning when the princess gave orders to harness for her journey, the peasants had come in a large crowd to the barn and sent word that they would not let her leave the village

Book 10, Chapter 14

An angry Nicholas intimidates the peasants into compliance. Nicholas and Mary are attracted to one another, but do not express it.

Summary:

Upon leaving Princess Mary, without considering what he would do Nicholas moved unconsciously with quick, resolute steps toward the crowd. Alpátych advises him to send for the military, but Nicholas ignores him. Nicholas is livid. Reaching the peasants, Nicholas strikes their leader Karp for not removing his hat. He then orders both Karp and Dorn tied up, and the other peasants to disperse. The peasants, having second thoughts about the wisdom of their actions, obey Nicholas. Two hours later the now subdued peasants are compliantly loading the carts. Nicholas escorts Mary away. The two are attracted to one another. But, due to the strange circumstances of their meeting, neither is expressively outgoing to the other. Nicholas, though, knows his mother would much prefer he marry this heiress rather than Sónya. Afterwards, Mary believes she is in love.

Quote from the chapter:

The impression the princess made on Rostóv was a very agreeable one. To remember her gave him pleasure, and when his comrades, hearing of his adventure at Boguchárovo, rallied him on having gone to look for hay and having picked up one of the wealthiest heiresses in Russia, he grew angry. It made him angry just because the idea of marrying the gentle Princess Mary, who was attractive to him and had an enormous fortune, had against his will more than once entered his head. For himself personally Nicholas could not wish for a better wife: by marrying her he would make the countess his mother happy, would be able to put his father's affairs in order, and would even—he felt it—ensure Princess Mary's happiness. But Sónya? And his plighted word? That was why Rostóv grew angry when he was rallied about Princess Bolkónskaya.

Book 10, Chapter 15

Prince Andrew is assigned to Kutúzov's headquarters, where he happens to run into Denísov.

Summary:

Kutúzov, who is now commander of the army, has sent for Prince Andrew, who arrives to find Kutúzov engaged with his new administrative duties such as inspecting troops and reviewing subordinates' reports. Kutúzov appears older, and has gained weight. Denísov is also there, seeking Kutúzov's approval of his plan to attack the French supply lines. Kutúzov asks Denísov to meet with him the next day. Kutúzov is visibly moved to learn of the old Prince's death. He receives a request for compensation for crops seized by the army, but says he denies all such requests. Kutúzov gives his complete attention to these headquarters duties, and is courteous to everyone, but it was clear he did not regard this category of work as highly important to the outcome of the war.

Quote from the chapter:

Kutúzov looked round. He was listening to the general's report—which consisted chiefly of a criticism of the position at Tsárevo-Zaymíshche—as he had listened to Denísov, and seven years previously had listened to the discussion at the Austerlitz council of war. He evidently listened only because he had ears which, though there was a piece of tow in one of them, could not help hearing; but it was evident that nothing the general could say would surprise or even interest him, that he knew all that would be said beforehand, and heard it all only because he had to, as one has to listen to the chanting of a service of prayer. All that Denísov had said was clever and to the point. What the general was saying was even more clever and to the point, but it was evident that Kutúzov despised knowledge and cleverness, and knew of something else that would decide the matter—something independent of cleverness and knowledge.

Book 10, Chapter 16

Andrew meets with Kutúzov, and tells him he prefers to remain with his regiment rather than joining the staff.

Summary:

Kutúzov is continuing about his headquarters business. While he is waiting to talk with Kutúzov, someone invites Andrew to lunch. After lunch, Kutúzov is able to speak with Andrew. Prince Andrew told Kutúzov all he knew of his father's death, and what he had seen at Bald Hills. Kutúzov says it's very sad, but that Andrew should now think of him as his second father. Kutúzov asks Andrew to join his staff, but Andrew says he prefers being with his regiment. Kutúzov responds "I am sorry, for I need you. But you're right, you're right! It's not here that men are needed. Advisers are always plentiful, but men are not. He compliments Andrew's efforts at Austerlitz, which pleases Andrew. They talk briefly about the coming fight with the Turks. Andrew leaves with the feeling that the army is in good hands with Kutúzov.

Quote from the chapter:

Prince Andrew could not have explained how or why it was, but after that interview with Kutúzov he went back to his regiment reassured as to the general course of affairs and as to the man to whom it had been entrusted. The more he realized the absence of all personal motive in that old man—in whom there seemed to remain only the habit of passions, and in place of an intellect (grouping events and drawing conclusions) only the capacity calmly to contemplate the course of events—the more reassured he was that everything would be as it should. "He will not bring in

any plan of his own. He will not devise or undertake anything," thought Prince Andrew, "but he will hear everything, remember everything, and put everything in its place. He will not hinder anything useful nor allow anything harmful. He understands that there is something stronger and more important than his own will—the inevitable course of events, and he can see them and grasp their significance, and seeing that significance can refrain from meddling and renounce his personal wish directed to something else. And above all," thought Prince Andrew, "one believes in him because he's Russian,

Book 10, Chapter 17

Frivolous talk, joking and gossip go on as ever in Moscow's salons, despite the fact that the city is now in great danger.

Summary:

The recent surge of patriotism in Moscow cooled when the Emperor left town. Anyone who promised money for the war still had to pay it, though. With the enemy's approach, the Moscovites' did not grow more serious but on the contrary became even more frivolous, as always happens with people who see a great danger approaching. There was a lot of jeering humor directed at the French. Pierre is kidded about his military unfitness. Some people, like Julie, are beginning to leave Moscow. Speaking French is much out of favor. There is a lot of idle gossip, such as about the Rostóv's finances, about Nicholas and Mary, and about Pierre and Natásha. (Pierre firmly denies this last rumor.)

Quote from the chapter:

No, madame!" Pierre continued in a tone of displeasure, "I have not taken on myself the role of Natalie Rostóva's knight at all, and have not been to their house for nearly a month. But I cannot understand the cruelty..." "Who excuses himself, accuses himself." said Julie, smiling and waving the lint triumphantly, and to have the last word she promptly changed the subject. "Do you know what I heard today? Poor Mary Bolkónskaya arrived in Moscow yesterday. Do you know that she has lost her father?" "Really? Where is she? I should like very much to see her," said Pierre. "I spent the evening with her yesterday. She is going to their estate near Moscow either today or tomorrow morning, with her nephew." "Well, and how is she?" asked Pierre. "She is well, but sad. But do you know who rescued her? It is quite a romance. Nicholas Rostóv! She was surrounded, and they wanted to kill her and had wounded some of her people. He rushed in and saved her...."

Book 10, Chapter 18

Deteriorating conditions in Moscow cause Pierre to finally make up his mind to join the army.

Summary:

Pierre is seeing some things which convince him the French will enter Moscow. There are riots on the streets, and everyone is leaving town. He agrees to help his half-sister, who is still living in his house, to move to Petersburg. People from France, or even anyone heard speaking French, risk being beaten up on the streets. He has already contributed more than he can afford in war support.

He asks himself for the hundredth time “Shall I join the army and enter the service, or wait?” But, when he sees several brutal beatings on the street, he at last makes up his mind. Next day, Pierre leaves to join the army at Mozháysk. Once in Mozháysk, it's difficult to find lodging.

Quote from the chapter:

At the sight of the tortured Frenchman and the crowd surrounding the Lóbnoe Place, Pierre had so definitely made up his mind that he could no longer remain in Moscow and would leave for the army that very day that it seemed to him that either he had told the coachman this or that the man ought to have known it for himself. On reaching home Pierre gave orders to Evstáfey—his head coachman who knew everything, could do anything, and was known to all Moscow—that he would leave that night for the army at Mozháysk, and that his saddle horses should be sent there. This could not all be arranged that day, so on Evstáfey’s representation Pierre had to put off his departure till next day to allow time for the relay horses to be sent on in advance.

Book 10, Chapter 19

Neither the French nor the Russians had good a priori reasons to battle at Shevárdino or Borodinó.

Summary:

In this chapter Tolstoy discusses the French and Russian decisions to fight at Shevárdino and then at Borodinó. Tolstoy believes there was not the least sense in it for either the French or the Russians. As he says, if the commanders had been guided by reason, it would seem that it must have been obvious to Napoleon that by advancing thirteen hundred miles and giving battle with a probability of losing a quarter of his army, he was advancing to certain destruction, and it must have been equally clear to Kutúzov that by accepting battle and risking the loss of a quarter of his army he would certainly lose Moscow. Tolstoy reiterates his theme that battles seldom unfold in a reasoned manner. He provides various examples of how historians fabricate plausible explanations for battlefield events after the fact.

Quote from the chapter:

Why and how were the battles of Shevárdino and Borodinó given and accepted? Why was the battle of Borodinó fought? There was not the least sense in it for either the French or the Russians. Its immediate result for the Russians was, and was bound to be, that we were brought nearer to the destruction of Moscow—which we feared more than anything in the world; and for the French its immediate result was that they were brought nearer to the destruction of their whole army—which they feared more than anything in the world. What the result must be was quite obvious, and yet Napoleon offered and Kutúzov accepted that battle.

Book 10, Chapter 20

Pierre heads out to find the army in order to join in a battle.

Summary:

On the day of the battle of Shevárdino, Pierre leaves Mozháysk and is driven to where he expects to find the army. He wants to join the fighting. As he gets nearer, he gets out and begins to walk

up the hill. Coming toward him was a train of carts carrying men who had been wounded in the engagement the day before. He sees many wounded soldiers walking or being carried. After a while, Pierre meets a doctor he knows. Pierre talks with the doctor, explaining his intention of taking part in a battle. The doctor tells Pierre he should apply to Kutúzov. When he reaches the little village street, he sees a group of peasants digging. Pierre is struck with the solemnity and importance of the moment.

Quote from the chapter:

But the doctor interrupted him and moved toward his gig. "I would go with you but on my honor I'm up to here"—and he pointed to his throat. "I'm galloping to the commander of the corps. How do matters stand?... You know, Count, there'll be a battle tomorrow. Out of an army of a hundred thousand we must expect at least twenty thousand wounded, and we haven't stretchers, or bunks, or dressers, or doctors enough for six thousand. We have ten thousand carts, but we need other things as well—we must manage as best we can!" The strange thought that of the thousands of men, young and old, who had stared with merry surprise at his hat (perhaps the very men he had noticed), twenty thousand were inevitably doomed to wounds and death amazed Pierre.

Book 10, Chapter 21

Pierre observes the surrounding battlefield, and sees a religious procession, and Kutúzov.

Summary:

Passing the toiling militiamen, Pierre ascends a knoll to view in panorama the battlefield for miles around. From there he can see villages, rivers, forests, smoking campfires and indefinite masses of troops. He can't, however, clearly distinguish the French from the Russian troops, and there's doubt about where the Russian left flank is. A large religious procession arrives carrying an icon of the Mother of God followed by many worshipers. Returning from an inspection trip, Kutúzov rides up and seeing the icon, bows, prays, and kisses the icon. The others present, the generals, officers, soldiers, militiamen and locals follow Kutúzov's example and worship the icon.

Quote from the chapter:

"Our position?" replied the officer with a smile of satisfaction. "I can tell you quite clearly, because I constructed nearly all our entrenchments. There, you see? There's our center, at Borodinó, just there," and he pointed to the village in front of them with the white church. "That's where one crosses the Kolochá. You see down there where the rows of hay are lying in the hollow, there's the bridge. That's our center. Our right flank is over there"—he pointed sharply to the right, far away in the broken ground—"That's where the Moskvá River is, and we have thrown up three redoubts there, very strong ones. The left flank..." here the officer paused. "Well, you see, that's difficult to explain.... Yesterday our left flank was there at Shevárdino, you see, where the oak is, but now we have withdrawn our left wing—now it is over there, do you see that village and the smoke? That's Semënovsk, yes, there," he pointed to Raévski's knoll. "But the battle will hardly be there. His having moved his troops there is only a ruse; he will probably pass round to the right of the Moskvá. But wherever it may be, many a man will be missing tomorrow!" he remarked.

Book 10, Chapter 22

In the procession crowd, Pierre sees a number of people he knows. He speaks with Borís, Dólokhov and Kutúzov.

Summary:

In the crowd Pierre meets Borís. Pierre tells Borís he wants to see the Russian battle line and to be present for the battle. Borís, while gracious to Pierre, believes the Russian left flank is very weak but is concealing his opinion from Kutúzov's staff. There were two factions at the headquarters: Kutúzov's party and that of Bennigsen. Borís has gotten himself a position on Bennigsen's staff. Playing politics as usual, Borís hopes that Bennigsen will be given command of the army if the battle goes badly. Pierre also meets Dólokhov, who has once again been demoted. Dólokhov, never cowardly, is volunteering for a dangerous mission in the hope it will restore him to favor. Pierre asks about Andrew, and Borís says Pierre can see him when they tour the camp. Pierre also speaks briefly with Kutúzov. Half an hour later Kutúzov left, and Bennigsen and his suite, with Pierre among them, set out on their ride along the line.

Quote from the chapter:

"What about the left flank?" asked Pierre "To tell you the truth, between ourselves, God only knows what state our left flank is in," said Borís confidentially lowering his voice. "It is not at all what Count Bennigsen intended. He meant to fortify that knoll quite differently, but..." Borís shrugged his shoulders, "his Serene Highness would not have it, or someone persuaded him. You see..." but Borís did not finish, for at that moment Kaysárov, Kutúzov's adjutant, came up to Pierre. "Ah, Kaysárov!" said Borís, addressing him with an unembarrassed smile, "I was just trying to explain our position to the count. It is amazing how his Serene Highness could so foresee the intentions of the French!" "You mean the left flank?" asked Kaysárov. "Yes, exactly; the left flank is now extremely strong."

Book 10, Chapter 23

Pierre tours the Russian line with Bennigsen and his staff. Bennigsen angrily moves a group of men from a strategic location from which Kutúzov had planned an ambush.

Summary:

Pierre, riding with Bennigsen's staff as they inspect the Russian lines, passes enormous numbers of troops and guns. They come to a high knoll where militiamen were digging entrenchments. This spot, later known as Raévski Redoubt, will become very important during the battle. They continue and see other places where Russian troops are preparing defenses. They observe a group of French troops in the distance, possibly including Napoleon himself. They then come to a place where a group of soldiers has been placed behind a hill. Unbeknownst to Bennigsen, these men had been intentionally placed there by Kutúzov in order to ambush the French should they come that way. Bennigsen assumes it was just a stupid mistake, and he angrily orders them to the top of the hill. Bennigsen does not tell Kutúzov what he has done. Later, at the extreme left flank, Bennigsen talked a great deal and with much heat, and, as it seemed to Pierre, gave orders of great military importance.

Quote from the chapter:

Listening to Bennigsen and the generals criticizing the position of the troops behind the hill, he quite understood them and shared their opinion, but for that very reason he could not understand

how the man who put them there behind the hill could have made so gross and palpable a blunder. Pierre did not know that these troops were not, as Bennigsen supposed, put there to defend the position, but were in a concealed position as an ambush, that they should not be seen and might be able to strike an approaching enemy unexpectedly. Bennigsen did not know this and moved the troops forward according to his own ideas without mentioning the matter to the commander in chief.

Book 10, Chapter 24

On the eve of battle, feeling his whole life has been meaningless, Andrew is agitated and irritable.

Summary:

That evening, Prince Andrew was agitated and irritable. He expected a terrible battle tomorrow. Facing death, his life seemed useless and burdensome. The things which had always motivated him all his life, like patriotism and the love of a woman, now appeared illusory in the cold light of the coming battle. Andrew particularly thought of the three great losses in his life: Natásha, his father and Bald Hills, and the part of Russia now held by the French - all this lost. And when he died, he would be buried and forgotten. Pierre unexpectedly arrives for a visit. In his agitated state of mind, Andrew is cross with Pierre.

Quote from the chapter:

Narrow and burdensome and useless to anyone as his life now seemed to him, Prince Andrew on the eve of battle felt agitated and irritable as he had done seven years before at Austerlitz. He had received and given the orders for next day's battle and had nothing more to do. But his thoughts—the simplest, clearest, and therefore most terrible thoughts—would give him no peace. He knew that tomorrow's battle would be the most terrible of all he had taken part in, and for the first time in his life the possibility of death presented itself to him—not in relation to any worldly matter or with reference to its effect on others, but simply in relation to himself, to his own soul—vividly, plainly, terribly, and almost as a certainty. And from the height of this perception all that had previously tormented and preoccupied him suddenly became illumined by a cold white light without shadows, without perspective, without distinction of outline.

Book 10, Chapter 25

While having tea, Andrew, Pierre and several officers discuss the war, and war in general.

Summary:

Prince Andrew, reluctant to entertain Pierre alone, invites several officers to join them for tea. They have a long conversation about war. They begin by asking Pierre his impression of their position. Pierre asks their opinion of Kutúzov, which he finds is generally favorable. It's good to have a Russian in charge. Andrew complains of Barclay's abandoning Smolénsk. Pierre says Barclay is a great strategist. Andrew counters that strategy is useless, that battles are unpredictable, and everything depends on the men on the field. Andrew expects Russia to win tomorrow. The officers leave, and Pierre and Andrew continue to talk about war. Andrew says if there is going to be a war, it should be to the death. As practiced now, he says, war is little more

than a favorite pastime for the idle and frivolous. Pierre leaves and Andrew tries to sleep, but his mind returns to recollections, including a pleasant conversation he once had with Natásha.

Quote from the chapter:

"But what is war? What is needed for success in warfare? What are the habits of the military? The aim of war is murder; the methods of war are spying, treachery, and their encouragement, the ruin of a country's inhabitants, robbing them or stealing to provision the army, and fraud and falsehood termed military craft. The habits of the military class are the absence of freedom, that is, discipline, idleness, ignorance, cruelty, debauchery, and drunkenness. And in spite of all this it is the highest class, respected by everyone. All the kings, except the Chinese, wear military uniforms, and he who kills most people receives the highest rewards. "They meet, as we shall meet tomorrow, to murder one another; they kill and maim tens of thousands, and then have thanksgiving services for having killed so many people (they even exaggerate the number), and they announce a victory, supposing that the more people they have killed the greater their achievement. How does God above look at them and hear them?" exclaimed Prince Andrew in a shrill, piercing voice. "Ah, my friend, it has of late become hard for me to live. I see that I have begun to understand too much.

Book 10, Chapter 26

Napoleon issues his order of the day for the army, on the eve of the battle of Borodinó.

Summary:

In this chapter Tolstoy describes the scene in Napoleon's quarters at Valúevo on August 25, the eve of the battle of Borodinó. Several valets are rubbing down and sprinkling cologne on the pampered Napoleon, prior to dressing him. An aide-de-camp reports to Napoleon that all Russian prisoners are being executed. He receives a report on the battle of Salamanca. Someone tells him he is much missed in Paris. No opportunity to praise Napoleon is overlooked. Walking out, Napoleon receives a gift of a portrait sent him by the Empress by a famous artist, depicting his son by the daughter of the Emperor of Austria. The portrait symbolically depicts the child ruling the globe. Predictably, everyone seeing it raves about the painting. After breakfasting, Napoleon dictates his order of the day to the army. He wants to inspire the French troops for the coming battle. Napoleon expects to be in Moscow in three days.

Quote from the chapter:

After breakfast Napoleon in de Beausset's presence dictated his order of the day to the army. "Short and energetic!" he remarked when he had read over the proclamation which he had dictated straight off without corrections. It ran: Soldiers! This is the battle you have so longed for. Victory depends on you. It is essential for us; it will give us all we need: comfortable quarters and a speedy return to our country. Behave as you did at Austerlitz, Friedland, Vítebsk, and Smolénsk. Let our remotest posterity recall your achievements this day with pride. Let it be said of each of you: "He was in the great battle before Moscow!" "Before Moscow!" repeated Napoleon

Book 10, Chapter 27

Tolstoy explains that the elaborate Borodinó battle plan prepared by Napoleon was in reality unworkable and valueless.

Summary:

Tolstoy, in this chapter, returns to his often-stated belief that battle plans prepared in advance are seldom useful in practice. On this day in reality no plan at all was needed, since the best place for the French to attack was completely obvious. Nonetheless, Napoleon took the trouble to create an elaborate, four-part Borodinó battle plan for his generals. Ironically, many historians still praise this plan. But, Tolstoy says, the truth is that no part of this plan was, or could be, carried out. For example, in the plan Poniatowski's job was to turn the Russian left flank, but in the battle another French unit was blocking his way. So, like all the other parts of the plan, this part could not be executed. And, since Napoleon was so far away, he did not even know what was happening on the field during the battle, and therefore could not make adjustments to his plan as the battle unfolded.

Quote from the chapter:

So not one of the orders in the disposition was, or could be, executed. But in the disposition it is said that, after the fight has commenced in this manner, orders will be given in accordance with the enemy's movements, and so it might be supposed that all necessary arrangements would be made by Napoleon during the battle. But this was not and could not be done, for during the whole battle Napoleon was so far away that, as appeared later, he could not know the course of the battle and not one of his orders during the fight could be executed.

Book 10, Chapter 28

Tolstoy says historic events are predetermined from on high — and depend on the combined wills of all the participants, (not just the wills of a few great men).

Summary:

In this chapter, Tolstoy uses the example of the French defeat in the battle of Borodinó to develop his philosophy of history. According to Tolstoy, many people have the mistaken idea that the course of history is determined by a few great men, like Napoleon. So, for example, people say things like The French lost at Borodinó because Napoleon had a cold that day. Tolstoy says this kind of thinking is all wrong! According to Tolstoy, the course of human events, (like the French loss at Borodinó, for example) are predetermined from on high — and depend on the coincidence of the wills of all the people who take part in the events. It's wrong to think that history is determined by the influence of a few great men like Napoleon, as people often incorrectly believe.

Quote from the chapter:

So it was not because of Napoleon's commands that they killed their fellow men. And it was not Napoleon who directed the course of the battle, for none of his orders were executed and during the battle he did not know what was going on before him. So the way in which these people killed one another was not decided by Napoleon's will but occurred independently of him, in accord with the will of hundreds of thousands of people who took part in the common action. It only seemed to Napoleon that it all took place by his will.

Book 10, Chapter 29

With all his preparations for battle complete, Napoleon passes a sleepless night and waits for the morning and the start of the battle.

Summary:

Everything Napoleon needed to do to prepare for the next day's battle is already done. Now it is just a matter of waiting for morning. In the evening, to pass the time, Napoleon chats carelessly with staff members about sundry non-military matters. He goes to bed, but he isn't sleepy and cannot fall asleep. Around 3:00 AM he gets up, and awaits the morning. He has a cold, and he chats with a staff member about how doctors never really seem to know how to cure anything. He makes some other small talk, takes a walk, confirms a few details related to orders he has given, confirms that the Russians do not seem to have moved during the night, and waits for the morning. At half-past five he rides to the village of Shevárdino. In the distance he can hear canons firing, indicating that the battle is starting.

Quote from the chapter:

He was so much interested in that task that he was unable to sleep, and in spite of his cold which had grown worse from the dampness of the evening, he went into the large division of the tent at three o'clock in the morning, loudly blowing his nose. He asked whether the Russians had not withdrawn, and was told that the enemy's fires were still in the same places. He nodded approval. The adjutant in attendance came into the tent.

Book 10, Chapter 30

In the morning, Pierre sees that the countryside around him has become a hive of military activity.

Summary:

In the morning Pierre's groom is unable to awaken him until everyone else has long since gone to the battlefield. Once outside, Pierre observes that the quiet countryside has become a hive of activity. There were troops to be seen everywhere, in front and to the right and left. The landscape is full of troops and covered by smoke clouds from the guns. Strangely, the smoke from the guns seems beautiful to Pierre. In a crowd of military men assembled there, members of the staff could be heard conversing. Pierre spots Kutúzov amid a group of military men. "Go, my dear fellow, go... and Christ be with you!" Kutúzov was saying. Kutúzov then gets on a horse to ride to the crossing, and Pierre decides to follow him.

Quote from the chapter:

The roar of guns sounded more distinct outside. An adjutant accompanied by a Cossack passed by at a sharp trot. "It's time, Count; it's time!" cried the adjutant. Telling the groom to follow him with the horses, Pierre went down the street to the knoll from which he had looked at the field of battle the day before. A crowd of military men was assembled there, members of the staff could be heard conversing in French, and Kutúzov's gray head in a white cap with a red band was visible, his gray nape sunk between his shoulders. He was looking through a field glass down the highroad before him. Mounting the steps to the knoll Pierre looked at the scene before him, spellbound by beauty. It was the same panorama he had admired from that spot the day before, but now the whole place was full of troops and covered by smoke clouds from the guns

Book 10, Chapter 31

Accidentally wandering into the midst of the battle, Pierre by chance takes refuge in Raévski's Redoubt, which becomes the center of the fighting.

Summary:

Pierre can't keep up with Kutúzov, and he accidently wanders into the battle. He is in danger and in the way. People are shouting at him. He finds someone to lead him to a safer place, the Raévski's Redoubt. This redoubt has trenches on three sides, and many Russian guns constantly firing. This redoubt becomes the center of the fighting. Thousands of men will die around it that day. But behind the redoubt, a strong comradery prevails with the defending Russian troops, even though canon balls are flying everywhere. Initially annoyed by Pierre's presence, eventually the men accept him. Pierre tries to stay out of everyone's way. The fighting is very intense all day. When they need to switch to firing grapeshot, Pierre offers to go to the wagons and help carry up boxes of ammunition.. But just before he reaches the ammunition wagon, it is hit and shatters into pieces. Pierre is knocked to the ground.

Quote from the chapter:

The booming cannonade and the fusillade of musketry were growing more intense over the whole field, especially to the left where Bagratión's flèches were, but where Pierre was the smoke of the firing made it almost impossible to distinguish anything. Moreover, his whole attention was engrossed by watching the family circle—separated from all else—formed by the men in the battery. His first unconscious feeling of joyful animation produced by the sights and sounds of the battlefield was now replaced by another, especially since he had seen that soldier lying alone in the hayfield. Now, seated on the slope of the trench, he observed the faces of those around him.

Book 10, Chapter 32

In fierce fighting, Raévski's Redoubt briefly falls to the French, but is retaken by the Russians.

Summary:

After being knocked down by the explosion, Pierre runs back to the redoubt only to find it has been overrun by the French. Pierre briefly grapples with a French soldier, and after nearly being struck by a cannonball, runs down the hill. Just then a group of Russians run up the hill and retake the redoubt, driving the French away. Pierre again went up onto the knoll where he had spent over an hour, and noticed that none of the soldiers who were there before, and who seemed almost like a family circle, and who had accepted Pierre like a member of there group - all of those people were gone. There were many dead whom he did not know, and some he recognized. There were wounded men laying about, some twitching on the ground. Pierre thought surely this must be the end of the fighting, but the battle raged on.

Quote from the chapter:

Pierre ran down the slope stumbling over the dead and wounded who, it seemed to him, caught at his feet. But before he reached the foot of the knoll he was met by a dense crowd of Russian soldiers who, stumbling, tripping up, and shouting, ran merrily and wildly toward the battery. (This was the attack for which Ermólov claimed the credit, declaring that only his courage and

good luck made such a feat possible: it was the attack in which he was said to have thrown some St. George's Crosses he had in his pocket into the battery for the first soldiers to take who got there.) The French who had occupied the battery fled, and our troops shouting "Hurrah!" pursued them so far beyond the battery that it was difficult to call them back. The prisoners were brought down from the battery and among them was a wounded French general, whom the officers surrounded. Crowds of wounded—some known to Pierre and some unknown—Russians and French, with faces distorted by suffering, walked, crawled, and were carried on stretchers from the battery.

Book 10, Chapter 33

Most of the fighting at Borodinó took place in a nearby open field. The marshals and generals had little control of the troops' movements.

Summary:

The chief action of the battle of Borodinó was fought on an open space between Borodinó and Bagratión's entrenchments. It began with both sides' cannons, several hundred of them, firing until the air was thick with smoke. Then both sides divisions advanced into the smoke covered field. The men fought in the simplest, most unsophisticated way. The marshals and generals, even Napoleon, had scant control over movements on the battlefield, because of distance, smoke-cover, and the rapidity of events - and the troops efforts at self-preservation. It didn't really matter how the troops moved on the fields, though, because disablement and death were happening. Balls and bullets were flying everywhere in the air.

Quote from the chapter:

The marshals and generals, who were nearer to the field of battle but, like Napoleon, did not take part in the actual fighting and only occasionally went within musket range, made their own arrangements without asking Napoleon and issued orders where and in what direction to fire and where cavalry should gallop and infantry should run. But even their orders, like Napoleon's, were seldom carried out, and then but partially. For the most part things happened contrary to their orders. Soldiers ordered to advance ran back on meeting grapeshot; soldiers ordered to remain where they were, suddenly, seeing Russians unexpectedly before them, sometimes rushed back and sometimes forward, and the cavalry dashed without orders in pursuit of the flying Russians. In this way two cavalry regiments galloped through the Semënovsk hollow and as soon as they reached the top of the incline turned round and galloped full speed back again. The infantry moved in the same way, sometimes running to quite other places than those they were ordered to go to

Book 10, Chapter 34

Unlike in the past, the Russians do not retreat; the battle of Borodinó drags on; and Napoleon is depressed.

Summary:

Unlike in former battles, instead of retreating the Russians at Borodinó stayed and continued fighting. Again and again the French sent masses of well-ordered troops into the fighting, only to

have them soon return as terrified mobs. The French generals re-formed them, but their numbers constantly decreased. Soon French reinforcements were wanted everywhere. Napoleon grew depressed. Everything that had always worked in the past was failing today. Napoleon with his long experience of war well knew the meaning of a battle not gained by the attacking side in eight hours. When Napoleon saw the depression on the faces around him and kept hearing reports of the Russians still holding their ground— he knew the French could lose this battle. And still came the requests from his generals for reinforcements, one even suggesting he send his guard into the battle.

Quote from the chapter:

But Napoleon with his long experience of war well knew the meaning of a battle not gained by the attacking side in eight hours, after all efforts had been expended. He knew that it was a lost battle and that the least accident might now—with the fight balanced on such a strained center—destroy him and his army. When he ran his mind over the whole of this strange Russian campaign in which not one battle had been won, and in which not a flag, or cannon, or army corps had been captured in two months, when he looked at the concealed depression on the faces around him and heard reports of the Russians still holding their ground—a terrible feeling like a nightmare took possession of him, and all the unlucky accidents that might destroy him occurred to his mind.

Book 10, Chapter 35

During the battle, Kutúzov commands the army with a light touch, issues orders only as demanded, and is mostly concerned that the army maintains the correct spirit.

Summary:

At Górki, near the center of the Russian position, Kutúzov commands the army during the battle of Borodinó. He gave no orders, but only assented to or dissented from what others suggested. He listened to the reports and dealt with crises only as needed. But he did not try to direct everything, which no one person could do. Not overly concerned with tactics, he rather focuses on the spirit of the army. When Bagratión is wounded, he sends someone else to command the first army. When Murat is captured, he publicizes the fact. He downplays negative news, and when Barclay de Tolly reports the battle is lost, Kutúzov strenuously sends word de Tolly does not know what he is talking about. On the contrary, Kutúzov's says that Russian has won the day, and issues an order to the army that tomorrow they will attack the French.

Quote from the chapter:

By long years of military experience (Kutúzov) knew, and with the wisdom of age understood, that it is impossible for one man to direct hundreds of thousands of others struggling with death, and he knew that the result of a battle is decided not by the orders of a commander in chief, nor the place where the troops are stationed, nor by the number of cannon or of slaughtered men, but by that intangible force called the spirit of the army, and he watched this force and guided it in as far as that was in his power.

Book 10, Chapter 36

His regiment under heavy artillery fire for hours, Prince Andrew is hit by a cannon ball.

Summary:

Prince Andrew's regiment is being held in reserve, stationary in an open field. They are under heavy artillery fire. They try to spread out and remain close to the ground, but the shelling goes on for hours. Without moving from that spot or firing a single shot at the French, hundreds of men in the regiment are killed or wounded. Naturally, everyone becomes gloomy. They try to divert their attention to anything, to any sight that offers, such as intently watching a passing dog or a horsecart. But the shelling goes on and on. Eventually, a cannon ball hits Andrew in the abdomen and he is terribly wounded. Bleeding profusely, Andrew is carried, barely conscious, to the medical tent. Laying there bleeding, he thinks Why was I so reluctant to part with life? There was something in this life I did not and do not understand."

Quote from the chapter:

Prince Andrew's regiment was among the reserves which till after one o'clock were stationed inactive behind Semënovsk, under heavy artillery fire. Toward two o'clock the regiment, having already lost more than two hundred men, was moved forward into a trampled oatfield in the gap between Semënovsk and the Knoll Battery, where thousands of men perished that day and on which an intense, concentrated fire from several hundred enemy guns was directed between one and two o'clock. Without moving from that spot or firing a single shot the regiment here lost another third of its men. From in front and especially from the right, in the unlifting smoke the guns boomed, and out of the mysterious domain of smoke that overlay the whole space in front, quick hissing cannon balls and slow whistling shells flew unceasingly.

Book 10, Chapter 37

Andrew sees a man's leg being amputated nearby, and realizes it's actually Anatole Kurágin. Andrew is overcome by a wave of love and forgiveness.

Summary:

Due to his rank, Andrew is taken directly into the medical tent. Prince Andrew could not make out distinctly what was in that tent. The pitiful groans from all sides and the torturing pain in his thigh, stomach, and back distracted him. He passes out as they are undressing him for surgery. When he comes to, the splintered portions of his thighbone had been extracted, the torn flesh cut away, and the wound bandaged. Slowly, Andrew realizes the sobbing, enfeebled amputee next to him is Anatole Kurágin. Andrew is still groggy, but gradually remembers the connection that existed between himself and Anatole, who was dimly gazing at him through tears. He remembered everything, and a wave of ecstatic pity and love overflowed Andrew's heart. Prince Andrew could no longer restrain himself and wept tender loving tears for his fellow men, for himself, and for his own and their errors.

Quote from the chapter:

Anatole was sobbing painfully. "Yes, it is he! Yes, that man is somehow closely and painfully connected with me," thought Prince Andrew, not yet clearly grasping what he saw before him. "What is the connection of that man with my childhood and life?" he asked himself without finding an answer. And suddenly a new unexpected memory from that realm of pure and loving childhood presented itself to him. He remembered Natásha as he had seen her for the first time at

the ball in 1810, with her slender neck and arms and with a frightened happy face ready for rapture, and love and tenderness for her, stronger and more vivid than ever, awoke in his soul.

Book 10, Chapter 38

This chapter is about Napoleon's psychology after Borodinó. Tolstoy tells how Napoleon was able to justify to himself all the horrible suffering he helped unleash on the world.

Summary:

Seeing the hundreds of thousands of people who perished, the darkened mind of Napoleon was able to glimpse, if only momentarily, all the horrible human suffering caused by the wars. This made it necessary for Napoleon to reconcile in his own mind what his eyes saw with his mental image of himself as a good person. By this point, Napoleon had become almost incapable of simple human feeling. So instead, what Napoleon did was to plunge deeper in his mind into the artificial realm of imaginary greatness, in order to rationalize to himself why he submissively fulfilled the cruel, inhuman role predestined for him. In this chapter, Tolstoy explicates in more detail these psychological processes. First of all, Tolstoy reminds us that Napoleon incorrectly believed himself such a great man as to personally be the cause of history. Then, Napoleon rationalizes that had he succeeded in unifying Europe, it would have been better for everyone. Afterall, he only wanted to make Europe a much nicer place to live. Then, Napoleon casts blame on others for not having helped him more. Finally, Napoleon retreats to the sniveling logic that, while a lot of people died, most of them were not French, (as if that made any difference). And with this, as a final salve to his ego, Napoleon intends to devote his leisure to writing an account of the great deeds he has done.

Quote from the chapter:

And he fell back into that artificial realm of imaginary greatness, and again—as a horse walking a treadmill thinks it is doing something for itself—he submissively fulfilled the cruel, sad, gloomy, and inhuman role predestined for him. And not for that day and hour alone were the mind and conscience darkened of this man on whom the responsibility for what was happening lay more than on all the others who took part in it. Never to the end of his life could he understand goodness, beauty, or truth, or the significance of his actions which were too contrary to goodness and truth, too remote from everything human, for him ever to be able to grasp their meaning. He could not disavow his actions, belauded as they were by half the world, and so he had to repudiate truth, goodness, and all humanity.

Book 10, Chapter 39

By not retreating from the French despite tremendous casualties, the Russians gained a great moral victory at Borodinó.

Summary:

The shelling at Borodinó continued into the evening. Tens of thousands of soldiers on both sides were killed or wounded that day. By evening, neither side felt capable of moving forward, but each side held their ground. The soldiers were tired and hungry. Every soldier on the field must

have wondered why they kept firing. Both sides suffered immense numbers of killed or wounded. But the Russians held on. They did not retreat. This surprised the French, who were used to their enemies fleeing with much less provocation. Their refusal to retreat made the battle of Borodinó a moral victory for the Russians. Although the French were able to go on to Moscow, the French army was doomed to perish from the wound it received at Borodinó.

Quote from the chapter:

But though toward the end of the battle the men felt all the horror of what they were doing, though they would have been glad to leave off, some incomprehensible, mysterious power continued to control them, and they still brought up the charges, loaded, aimed, and applied the match, though only one artilleryman survived out of every three, and though they stumbled and panted with fatigue, perspiring and stained with blood and powder. The cannon balls flew just as swiftly and cruelly from both sides, crushing human bodies, and that terrible work which was not done by the will of a man but at the will of Him who governs men and worlds continued.

Book 11, Chapter 1

To study the laws of history we must study the common, infinitesimally small elements by which the masses of society are moved.

Summary:

In this chapter Tolstoy speculates about how to discover the laws of history. Tolstoy believes the best way to discover these laws is to study what goes on at the lowest possible level, i.e. processes which go on at the level of the individual member in society. He says that it's not possible to understand the laws of history by understanding great men, because history is not determined by a few great men but rather by all the innumerable wills of everyone involved. Similarly, Tolstoy says, it's not possible to understand the laws of history by studying a series of discrete events, because in fact discrete events don't exist. (In nature, all events are connected to other events.) So, Tolstoy concludes, the best way to understand the laws of history would be to look at the processes going on at the personal level for the individual members of a society.

Quote from the chapter:

To understand the laws of this continuous movement is the aim of history. But to arrive at these laws, resulting from the sum of all those human wills, man's mind postulates arbitrary and disconnected units. The first method of history is to take an arbitrarily selected series of continuous events and examine it apart from others, though there is and can be no beginning to any event, for one event always flows uninterruptedly from another. The second method is to consider the actions of some one man—a king or a commander—as equivalent to the sum of many individual wills; whereas the sum of individual wills is never expressed by the activity of a single historic personage. Historical science in its endeavor to draw nearer to truth continually takes smaller and smaller units for examination. But however small the units it takes, we feel that to take any unit disconnected from others, or to assume a beginning of any phenomenon, or to say that the will of many men is expressed by the actions of any one historic personage, is in itself false.

Book 11, Chapter 2

People today often second guess Kutúzov's decision to allow the French into Moscow. But, at the time, it was probably his best practical option.

Summary:

Kutúzov allowing Napoleon to enter Moscow was more or less inevitable after the battle of Borodinó. Despite early claims of a Russian victory, the immense losses suffered by the Russians at Borodinó made renewed fighting impossible. Their momentum alone was enough to carry the French army into Moscow. For five weeks after the French took the city, there were no battles. The French did not move, and then suddenly, with no fresh reason, fled back. In hindsight, a lot of experts like to question Kutúzov's decision to yield Moscow to the French. It's easy to theorize about alternative strategies Kutúzov could have tried. But those who do are forgetting the actual conditions Kutúzov was facing at the time. He was in the midst of a most complex interplay of conflicting intrigues, worries, contingencies, threats, deceptions and so on, and he needed to act quickly. Events and time will not wait on the Commander. Realistically then, allowing the French into Moscow after the battle of Borodinó was probably the best Kutúzov could have done under the circumstances.

Quote from the chapter:

On the evening of the twenty-sixth of August, Kutúzov and the whole Russian army were convinced that the battle of Borodinó was a victory. Kutúzov reported so to the Emperor. He gave orders to prepare for a fresh conflict to finish the enemy and did this not to deceive anyone, but because he knew that the enemy was beaten, as everyone who had taken part in the battle knew it. But all that evening and next day reports came in one after another of unheard-of losses, of the loss of half the army, and a fresh battle proved physically impossible. It was impossible to give battle before information had been collected, the wounded gathered in, the supplies of ammunition replenished, the slain reckoned up, new officers appointed to replace those who had been killed, and before the men had had food and sleep. And meanwhile, the very next morning after the battle, the French army advanced of itself upon the Russians, carried forward by the force of its own momentum

Book 11, Chapter 3

At an impromptu gathering, Kutúzov hears everyone's opinions but decides he now has no option but to abandon Moscow to the French. He can't believe it has come to this.

Summary:

On the afternoon of the battle, Kutúzov had not yet admitted to himself the possibility of retreating beyond Moscow without a battle. But, at an informal roadside gathering on the afternoon of the battle of Borodinó which in effect was something like a council of war, Kutúzov listened to what everyone had to say. Sadly, Kutúzov became aware that to continue to fight the French before Moscow was simply not viable. No workable plan for such a battle was possible. If Bennigsen insisted on the position being defended and others still discussed it, these people were not thinking of what was best for Russia. So, Kutúzov has to ask himself “Have I really allowed Napoleon to reach Moscow, and when did I do so? He could not believe it had come to this. Kutúzov had been convinced that he alone could maintain command of the army in these difficult circumstances, and that in all the world he alone could encounter the invincible Napoleon without fear. Now he was

horrified at the thought of the order he had to issue for the army to retreat, which would leave an undefended Moscow to the French.

Quote from the chapter:

Kutúzov's expression grew more and more preoccupied and gloomy. From all this talk he saw only one thing: that to defend Moscow was a physical impossibility in the full meaning of those words, that is to say, so utterly impossible that if any senseless commander were to give orders to fight, confusion would result but the battle would still not take place. It would not take place because the commanders not merely all recognized the position to be impossible, but in their conversations were only discussing what would happen after its inevitable abandonment. How could the commanders lead their troops to a field of battle they considered impossible to hold? The lower-grade officers and even the soldiers (who too reason) also considered the position impossible and therefore could not go to fight, fully convinced as they were of defeat.

Book 11, Chapter 4

That evening at a formal Council of War attended by the Russian generals, Kutúzov rejects Bennigsen's proposal for a flanking attack the next day and orders the retreat of the army.

Summary:

In the evening there is a formal council of war. Bennigsen keeps everyone waiting to start the meeting for two hours while he finishes his dinner. Kutúzov sat apart in a dark corner. When he finally arrives, Bennigsen proposes Russia transfers it's troops from the left to the right flank in order to attack the French the next day. Kutúzov rejects Bennigsen's plan, saying that troop movements so near the enemy line are fraught with risk. Instead, Kutúzov orders the army to retreat, effectively yielding Moscow to the French. Kutúzov personally takes the responsibility for this decision, although he wonders to himself how things could have possibly reached this point. "I did not expect this," said he to his adjutant Schneider when the latter came in late that night. "I did not expect this! I did not think this would happen" Kutúzov said.

Quote from the chapter:

"Gentlemen," said Kutúzov, "I cannot approve of the count's plan. Moving troops in close proximity to an enemy is always dangerous, and military history supports that view. For instance..." Kutúzov seemed to reflect, searching for an example, then with a clear, naïve look at Bennigsen he added: "Oh yes; take the battle of Friedland, which I think the count well remembers, and which was... not fully successful, only because our troops were rearranged too near the enemy...." There followed a momentary pause, which seemed very long to them all. The discussion recommenced, but pauses frequently occurred and they all felt that there was no more to be said. During one of these pauses Kutúzov heaved a deep sigh as if preparing to speak. They all looked at him. "Well, gentlemen, I see that it is I who will have to pay for the broken crockery," said he, and rising slowly he moved to the table. "Gentlemen, I have heard your views. Some of you will not agree with me. But I," he paused, "by the authority entrusted to me by my Sovereign and country, order a retreat."

Book 11, Chapter 5

Rather than to live under French rule, the patriotic citizens of Moscow preferred to evacuate and burn their city.

Summary:

After the battle of Borodinó, the abandonment and burning of Moscow was as inevitable as the retreat of the army beyond Moscow without fighting. The people could have stayed in place and maybe lived peacefully in an occupied city, but for these patriotic citizens It was simply out of the question to be under French rule, it would be the worst thing that could happen. So as soon as the enemy drew near to Moscow, the wealthy classes went away abandoning their property, while the poorer remained and burned and destroyed what was left. Many patriotic Moscovites had already left the city before the battle of Borodinó. All these fleeing citizens, who may have appeared cowardly to some, were in point of fact carrying out the very work which would save Russia. Fyodor Rostopchín, who at the time was Governor General of Moscow, had some foolish and inconstant directions for the people, which were ignored. Instead, the wisdom of the people prevailed, and they did what they could see was necessary rather than live under French rule, to the greater glory of Russia.

Quote from the chapter:

They went away even before the battle of Borodinó and still more rapidly after it, despite Rostopchín's calls to defend Moscow or the announcement of his intention to take the wonder-working icon of the Iberian Mother of God and go to fight, or of the balloons that were to destroy the French, and despite all the nonsense Rostopchín wrote in his broadsheets. They knew that it was for the army to fight, and that if it could not succeed it would not do to take young ladies and house serfs to the Three Hills quarter of Moscow to fight Napoleon, and that they must go away, sorry as they were to abandon their property to destruction. They went away without thinking of the tremendous significance of that immense and wealthy city being given over to destruction, for a great city with wooden buildings was certain when abandoned by its inhabitants to be burned. They went away each on his own account, and yet it was only in consequence of their going away that the momentous event was accomplished that will always remain the greatest glory of the Russian people.

Book 11, Chapter 6

Hélène receives an offer of marriage from one of her Petersburg lovers, and decides to convert to Catholicism so that her prior marriage with Pierre can be annulled.

Summary:

Hélène, having returned to Petersburg, found herself in a difficult position. In Petersburg she had two lovers, each desiring her exclusive attentions. Hélène wished to preserve her intimacy with both without offending either. Most women would have found this situation a bit awkward to say the least. But Hélène, like a really great man who can do whatever he pleases, at once assumed her own position to be correct, as she sincerely believed it to be, and that everyone else was to blame. When one of the lovers proposed marriage, Hélène took the suggestion she convert to Catholicism so that her prior marriage to Pierre could be made null, enabling Hélène to remarry. The Catholic Church, anticipating generous donations from this wealthy convert, welcomed Hélène with open

arms. And Hélène, assisted by Catholic clergy, began the lengthy process which would eventually enable her to be remarried in the Catholic church.

Quote from the chapter:

"Marry me, and I will be your slave!" "But that's impossible." "You won't deign to demean yourself by marrying me, you..." said Hélène, beginning to cry. The prince tried to comfort her, but Hélène, as if quite distraught, said through her tears that there was nothing to prevent her marrying, that there were precedents (there were up to that time very few, but she mentioned Napoleon and some other exalted personages), that she had never been her husband's wife, and that she had been sacrificed. "But the law, religion..." said the prince, already yielding. "The law, religion... What have they been invented for if they can't arrange that?" said Hélène. The prince was surprised that so simple an idea had not occurred to him, and he applied for advice to the holy brethren of the Society of Jesus, with whom he was on intimate terms.

Book 11, Chapter 7

Hélène makes sure all Petersburg society knows she plans to marry one or the other of her two lovers, so that the Catholic Church will be less reluctant to go along. Few question her plan.

Summary:

Hélène noticed that her Catholic directors kept raising difficulties about her plan to divorce Pierre and remarry. She guessed the church's reluctance stemmed from its fears of how the civil authorities might view her unconventional plan. Therefore, Hélène told everyone in Petersburg society she would be marrying one of her two lovers, but she hadn't yet decided which of the two it would be. Almost no one questioned Hélène's unconventional plan. Instead, everyone jumped into thinking about which lover she should marry. Only a few people hinted at the immorality of her plan, or said the Gospel forbids divorce. By the beginning of August Hélène's affairs were clearly defined and she wrote a letter to her husband informing him of her intention to marry. This letter was brought to Pierre's house when he was still on the field of Borodinó.

Quote from the chapter:

Hélène understood that the question was very simple and easy from the ecclesiastical point of view, and that her directors were making difficulties only because they were apprehensive as to how the matter would be regarded by the secular authorities. So she decided that it was necessary to prepare the opinion of society. She provoked the jealousy of the elderly magnate and told him what she had told her other suitor; that is, she put the matter so that the only way for him to obtain a right over her was to marry her. The elderly magnate was at first as much taken aback by this suggestion of marriage with a woman whose husband was alive, as the younger man had been, but Hélène's imperturbable conviction that it was as simple and natural as marrying a maiden had its effect on him too. Had Hélène herself shown the least sign of hesitation, shame, or secrecy, her cause would certainly have been lost; but not only did she show no signs of secrecy or shame, on the contrary, with good-natured naïveté she told her intimate friends (and these were all Petersburg) that both the prince and the magnate had proposed to her and that she loved both and was afraid of grieving either.

Book 11, Chapter 8

While walking back to the inn, Pierre meets three soldiers who share their humble food with him and accompany him on the long walk to the town.

Summary:

Near the end of the battle of Borodinó, Pierre became entangled in the crowds of soldiers heading for their camps. He passes by the bloody medical station. After this terrible day Pierre wanted only to return to normality and to sleep in his own bed. He walks a few miles, stops to rest, and meets a group of three soldiers who are going the same direction. The soldiers kindly share their humble mash with him, and he walks with them through the night to the town. There he meets his groom, who takes Pierre back to the inn. But there is not a room to be had at the inn, they were all occupied. So Pierre went out into the yard and, covering himself up head and all, lay down in his carriage to sleep.

Quote from the chapter:

"Would you like a little mash?" the first soldier asked, and handed Pierre a wooden spoon after licking it clean. Pierre sat down by the fire and began eating the mash, as they called the food in the cauldron, and he thought it more delicious than any food he had ever tasted. As he sat bending greedily over it, helping himself to large spoonfuls and chewing one after another, his face was lit up by the fire and the soldiers looked at him in silence. "Where have you to go to? Tell us!" said one of them. "To Mozháysk." "You're a gentleman, aren't you?" "Yes." "And what's your name?" "Peter Kirílych." "Well then, Peter Kirílych, come along with us, we'll take you there."

Book 11, Chapter 9

Pierre dreams he hears his deceased masonic teacher, and other dreams that night. Next day he learns Prince Andrew and Anatole are dead.

Summary:

If was a night of vivid dreams and fitful sleep for Pierre. Scarcely had he laid his head on the pillow before the horrors of the day's fighting flooded his mind. A feeling of dread of death seized him. Frightened, he sits up and sees the yard is peaceful. He marvels at the bravery of the soldiers, and wishes he could have been a simple soldier himself. He dreams of a solemn meeting of the lodge where many people are present, including his deceased Masonic mentor. He dreams his mentor or someone else is speaking to him about goodness. The next day he can't remember what was said to him, and incorrectly believes the words were from someone outside himself. That morning he learns of the deaths of Prince Andrew and Anatole.

Quote from the chapter:

"To endure war is the most difficult subordination of man's freedom to the law of God," the voice had said. "Simplicity is submission to the will of God; you cannot escape from Him. And they are simple. They do not talk, but act. The spoken word is silver but the unspoken is golden. Man can be master of nothing while he fears death, but he who does not fear it possesses all. If there were no suffering, man would not know his limitations, would not know himself. The hardest thing (Pierre went on thinking, or hearing, in his dream) is to be able in your soul to unite the meaning of all. To unite all?" he asked himself. "No, not to unite. Thoughts cannot be united, but to harness all these thoughts together is what we need!

Book 11, Chapter 10

Upon returning to Moscow, Pierre is called to the office of the governor.

Summary:

Arriving in Moscow, Pierre is summoned at once by the Governor General of Moscow, Count Rostopchín. Pierre waits in an outer room to see him. Rostopchín's anteroom and reception room were full of officials who had been summoned or had come for orders. They all seemed dissatisfied and uneasy. Pierre learns about some of the dubious things Rostopchín has been up to as the French draw near to the city. For example, Rostopchín has been concealing from the inhabitants the fact that Moscow must be surrendered, prosecuted a citizen accused of circulating Napoleon's proclamation, and has taken other questionable actions in his capacity as commander in chief. Someone asks Pierre about his family troubles, but Pierre says he's heard nothing about it.

Quote from the chapter:

Without going home, Pierre took a cab and drove to see the Moscow commander in chief. Count Rostopchín had only that morning returned to town from his summer villa at Sokólniki. The anteroom and reception room of his house were full of officials who had been summoned or had come for orders. Vasílchikov and Plátov had already seen the count and explained to him that it was impossible to defend Moscow and that it would have to be surrendered. Though this news was being concealed from the inhabitants, the officials—the heads of the various government departments—knew that Moscow would soon be in the enemy's hands, just as Count Rostopchín himself knew it, and to escape personal responsibility they had all come to the governor to ask how they were to deal with their various departments.

Book 11, Chapter 11

Rostopchín questions Pierre's masonic connections, and asks Pierre to leave the city. Pierre learns Hélène wants a divorce. Pierre goes away, where to no one knows.

Summary:

Pierre was summoned to the commander in chief. Rostopchín asks Pierre if he is a mason, and mentions several masons he has had deported. Pierre asks why they were deported, but Rostopchín won't say. Rostopchín mentions he knows that Pierre had just given a ride to a general who Rostopchín considers undesirable for some reason. Rostopchín advises Pierre not to communicate with such people, and to leave Moscow as soon as possible. Returning home, he has to talk to different people who have been waiting there. He reads Hélène's letter about wanting a divorce. In the morning, more people are waiting for Pierre. Instead of seeing them, Pierre slips out the back of the house. From that time till the end of the destruction of Moscow no one in the household, despite all the search they made, saw Pierre again or knew where he was.

Quote from the chapter:

"They, the soldiers at the battery, Prince Andrew killed... that old man... Simplicity is submission to God. Suffering is necessary... the meaning of all... one must harness... my wife is getting married... One must forget and understand..." And going to his bed he threw himself on it without

undressing and immediately fell asleep. When he awoke next morning the major-domo came to inform him that a special messenger, a police officer, had come from Count Rostopchín to know whether Count Bezúkhov had left or was leaving the town. A dozen persons who had business with Pierre were awaiting him in the drawing room. Pierre dressed hurriedly and, instead of going to see them, went to the back porch and out through the gate.

Book 11, Chapter 12

The Rostóv's are very late to start preparing to evacuate Moscow, but they manage to get Pétya reassigned near them where he will be safer.

Summary:

Up to a few days before they planned to leave Moscow, the Rostóv's had not so much as begun packing. The Countess was preoccupied with the safety of her sons, both of them now serving in the army. The Countess simply would not leave Moscow until Pétya returned. Finally, they managed to have Pétya transferred to Bezúkhov's regiment near Moscow so he could be with the family. By then, nearly all of their acquaintances had already fled, and the entire city was in a bustle and commotion. Everyday thousands of wounded men were pouring into Moscow and thousands of the inhabitants with their possessions poured out of the city. All sorts of strange and contradictory rumors about what was happening and what would happen next were flying about. Deep down, though, everyone knew Moscow was going to be abandoned, and they ought to get away quickly and take whatever they could carry. Finally, the Rostóv family began to pack to go. Natásha and Pétya were not much help, but Sónya was a huge help to the family. This helped take Sónya's mind off of the fact that Nicholas might marry Princess Mary rather than her, and really if that happened it might be the best thing for the family.

Quote from the chapter:

Owing to the (Count Rostov's) customary carelessness nothing was ready for their departure by the twenty-eighth of August and the carts that were to come from their Ryazán and Moscow estates to remove their household belongings did not arrive till the thirtieth. From the twenty-eighth till the thirty-first all Moscow was in a bustle and commotion. Every day thousands of men wounded at Borodinó were brought in by the Dorogomílov gate and taken to various parts of Moscow, and thousands of carts conveyed the inhabitants and their possessions out by the other gates.

Book 11, Chapter 13

There is a big, last minute flurry of activity in the Rostóv house, as everyone hurries to be ready to leave town the next day.

Summary:

Having put off packing for so long now, the day before the family is supposed to evacuate everyone is rushing to pack up the Rostóv household belongings. Natásha was ashamed of doing nothing when everyone else was so busy, and several times that morning had tried to set to work, but her heart was just not in it. Natásha was sitting around listlessly when an enormously long row

of carts full of wounded men stopped in the street. Natásha runs out and greets them. She encourages as many as possible of the wounded to come into their yard. She asks her father if the wounded can move into the house and he instantly agrees. But, he says, they have waited far too long to evacuate, and the family absolutely had to leave Moscow the next day. He says the Moscow police have already gone. Pétya returns talking about a rumored battle the next day, and the Countess becomes very fearful. Rather than leave tomorrow, the frightened Countess now wants the family to leave Moscow that very evening.

Quote from the chapter:

they have brought some wounded here—officers. Will you let them come? They have nowhere to go. I knew you'd let them come!" she said quickly all in one breath. "What officers? Whom have they brought? I don't understand anything about it," said the countess. Natásha laughed, and the countess too smiled slightly. "I knew you'd give permission... so I'll tell them," and, having kissed her mother, Natásha got up and went to the door. In the hall she met her father, who had returned with bad news. "We've stayed too long!" said the count with involuntary vexation. "The Club is closed and the police are leaving." "Papa, is it all right—I've invited some of the wounded into the house?" said Natásha. "Of course it is," he answered absently. "That's not the point. I beg you not to indulge in trifles now, but to help to pack, and tomorrow we must go, go, go!..."

Book 11, Chapter 14

In the Rostóv house, everyone is rushing to get ready for evacuation the next day. Natásha takes over direction of the work. A badly wounded officer to be lodged at the house is Prince Andrew.

Summary:

After dinner the whole Rostóv household set to work with enthusiastic haste packing their belongings and preparing for their departure. The old count ran about shouting confused instructions, and soon all became total confusion owing to the count's contradictory orders, with much shouting and disputing. The scene was confused and chaotic. Suddenly, Natásha, with the ardor characteristic of all she did, sprung into action and took over direction of the packing. Thanks to Natásha's directions the work now went on expeditiously, unnecessary things were left behind, and the most valuable belongings packed as compactly as possible. That night another wounded man was driven into the Rostóvs' yard. He appeared to be a very important man. "Please come in here. The masters are going away and the whole house will be empty," said the old woman to the old attendant. "Well, perhaps," said he with a sigh. "We don't expect to get him home alive! We have a house of our own in Moscow, but it's a long way from here, and there's nobody living in it." This badly wounded officer, it turned out, was actually Prince Andrew.

Quote from the chapter:

That night another wounded man was driven down the Povarskáya, and Mávra Kuzmínichna, who was standing at the gate, had him brought into the Rostóvs' yard. Mávra Kuzmínichna concluded that he was a very important man. He was being conveyed in a calèche with a raised hood, and was quite covered by an apron. On the box beside the driver sat a venerable old attendant. A doctor and two soldiers followed the carriage in a cart. "Please come in here. The masters are going away and the whole house will be empty," said the old woman to the old attendant. "Well, perhaps," said he with a sigh. "We don't expect to get him home alive! We have a house of our own in Moscow, but it's a long way from here, and there's nobody living in it." "Do us the honor to come in, there's plenty of everything in the master's house. Come in," said Mávra

Kuzmínichna. "Is he very ill?" she asked. The attendant made a hopeless gesture. "We don't expect to get him home! We must ask the doctor."

Book 11, Chapter 15

The Count permits wounded soldiers to ride in their carts, and will leave the family valuables behind. The Countess is upset. If they lose their house and valuable property, her children will have nothing.

Summary:

Moscow's last day had come. Church bells everywhere were ringing for service. Nobody seemed yet to realize what awaited the city. The only two observable changes are the mobs of peasants in the streets and the quickly skyrocketing prices of commodities. The Rostóv's valuables are at last packed and loaded, and the carts are ready to leave. But wounded soldiers begin to beg the Count for transport. The patriotic and kind-hearted count cannot refuse the desperate soldiers. He orders the servants to make room for any wounded soldiers who request a ride. The servants begin to unload the carts, as more wounded soldiers arrive requesting transport. When the Countess learns the luggage is being taken out of the carts to make room for wounded men, she becomes upset. If they lose their house and property, her children will have nothing. It's the governments responsibility to transport the wounded, she says. Just then Berg arrives to see them.

Quote from the chapter:

"Count, be so good as to allow me... for God's sake, to get into some corner of one of your carts! I have nothing here with me.... I shall be all right on a loaded cart...." Before the officer had finished speaking the orderly made the same request on behalf of his master. "Oh, yes, yes, yes!" said the count hastily. "I shall be very pleased, very pleased. Vasílich, you'll see to it. Just unload one or two carts. Well, what of it... do what's necessary..." said the count, muttering some indefinite order. But at the same moment an expression of warm gratitude on the officer's face had already sealed the order. The count looked around him. In the yard, at the gates, at the window of the wings, wounded officers and their orderlies were to be seen. They were all looking at the count and moving toward the porch. "Please step into the gallery, your excellency," said the major-domo. "What are your orders about the pictures?" The count went into the house with him, repeating his order not to refuse the wounded who asked for a lift.

Book 11, Chapter 16

Natásha protests leaving the wounded soldiers behind to carry away the Rostóv's belongings. Her mother realizes Natásha is correct. The carts are unloaded to make room for as many soldiers as possible.

Summary:

Countess Rostóv has just insisted that their valuable belongings not be left behind in favor of transporting soldiers. Just then their son-in-law Berg arrives and, ironically, he wants to borrow a cart to move some furniture. The frustrated Count Rostóv tells Berg "Ask the countess, I don't give orders." Natásha bursts into the room, in shock, and tells her mother it would be monstrous to

abandon the wounded soldiers in order to save their belongings. The Countess realizes that Natásha is correct, and relents. The Count orders that the carts be used to transport the wounded and their trunks put in the storerooms. When they understood that order the servants set to work at this new task with pleasure and zeal. The whole household, servants included, became bright and animated due to this change of plans, and they load as many soldiers as possible into the carts.

Quote from the chapter:

When they understood that order the servants set to work at this new task with pleasure and zeal. It no longer seemed strange to them but on the contrary it seemed the only thing that could be done, just as a quarter of an hour before it had not seemed strange to anyone that the wounded should be left behind and the goods carted away but that had seemed the only thing to do. The whole household, as if to atone for not having done it sooner, set eagerly to work at the new task of placing the wounded in the carts. The wounded dragged themselves out of their rooms and stood with pale but happy faces round the carts. The news that carts were to be had spread to the neighboring houses, from which wounded men began to come into the Rostóvs' yard. Many of the wounded asked them not to unload the carts but only to let them sit on the top of the things. But the work of unloading, once started, could not be arrested. It seemed not to matter whether all or only half the things were left behind. Cases full of china, bronzes, pictures, and mirrors that had been so carefully packed the night before now lay about the yard, and still they went on searching for and finding possibilities of unloading this or that and letting the wounded have another and yet another cart.

Book 11, Chapter 17

The Rostóv's finally get underway, accompanied by their carts loaded with the wounded. They don't tell Natásha Prince Andrew is with them. On the road they spot Pierre dressed as a coachman.

Summary:

Before two o'clock in the afternoon the Rostóvs' four carriages, packed full and with the horses harnessed are ready to go. One by one the carts with the wounded had moved out of the yard. Sónya is the first in the family to realize that Prince Andrew is with the wounded. She runs to tell the Countess, who has assembled with others for the usual silent prayer before starting a journey, that Andrew is present. Sónya tells the Countess that Andrew is not expected to survive. They decide not to tell Natásha Prince Andrew is with them, so as not to upset her. Once underway, they join a huge procession of carriages leaving Moscow. On the road they are surprised to see Pierre walking along in a coachman's coat, evidently as a gentleman in disguise. They are only able to speak briefly with Pierre and he doesn't tell them what he is up to. But they learn Pierre plans to remain in Moscow.

Quote from the chapter:

"Mamma," said Sónya, "Prince Andrew is here, mortally wounded. He is going with us." The countess opened her eyes in dismay and, seizing Sónya's arm, glanced around. "Natásha?" she murmured. At that moment this news had only one significance for both of them. They knew their Natásha, and alarm as to what would happen if she heard this news stifled all sympathy for the man they both liked. "Natásha does not know yet, but he is going with us," said Sónya. "You say he is dying?" Sónya nodded. The countess put her arms around Sónya and began to cry.

Book 11, Chapter 18

After slipping away from his house, Pierre spends two days at the home of his deceased masonic benefactor, and obtains peasant clothes for himself and a pistol.

Summary:

On his first morning back in Moscow, Pierre was suddenly overwhelmed by a sense of confusion and hopelessness. Unable to face the people waiting to see him, he slipped out of his house and spent two days in the home of his deceased masonic benefactor Bazdéev. Pierre had been asked to take charge of the deceased man's masonic books, so he was expected at the Bazdéev house. On the way, he heard a rumor that there was to be a major battle with the French in Moscow the next day. Once at Bazdéev's house, Pierre went to the study to look over the books, but he soon drifted into a long meditation. He stays in Bazdéev's house for two days, and while there he asks Bazdéev's old servant Gerásim to help him obtain peasants clothes and a pistol. On his way with Gerásim to buy the pistol, Pierre met the Rostóvs who were just then on their way out of Moscow.

Quote from the chapter:

"I beg you not to tell anyone who I am, and to do what I ask you." "Yes, your excellency," replied Gerásim. "Will you have something to eat?" "No, but I want something else. I want peasant clothes and a pistol," said Pierre, unexpectedly blushing. "Yes, your excellency," said Gerásim after thinking for a moment. All the rest of that day Pierre spent alone in his benefactor's study, and Gerásim heard him pacing restlessly from one corner to another and talking to himself. And he spent the night on a bed made up for him there. Gerásim, being a servant who in his time had seen many strange things, accepted Pierre's taking up his residence in the house without surprise

Book 11, Chapter 19

When he reached Moscow, Napoleon assumed he would be met by an official deputation from the Russians, but there was no deputation and the city was empty.

Summary:

When Kutúzov ordered the retreat through Moscow, the army marched through the night. The Russian army marched through the middle of Moscow, and kept going. By daybreak, the main army was on the other side of Moscow or beyond it. Napoleon was not far behind. But when he reached the outskirts of Moscow, Napoleon stopped and awaited the deputation he was expecting from the Russians. While he waited, Napoleon imagined how well he was going to rule Russia. He pictured himself as a kind and wise ruler, and pictured the Russians as his subjects, and was carried away by the tone of magnanimity he intended to adopt toward them. But no Russian deputation ever came, because the city was empty. Napoleon send some people into Moscow to look for a deputation, but they found only drunken mobs in the streets. Finally, tired of waiting, Napoleon gave the order for his troops to enter the city.

Quote from the chapter:

"But am I really in Moscow? Yes, here it lies before me, but why is the deputation from the city so long in appearing?" (Napoleon) wondered. Meanwhile an agitated consultation was being

carried on in whispers among his generals and marshals at the rear of his suite. Those sent to fetch the deputation had returned with the news that Moscow was empty, that everyone had left it. The faces of those who were not conferring together were pale and perturbed. They were not alarmed by the fact that Moscow had been abandoned by its inhabitants (grave as that fact seemed), but by the question how to tell the Emperor—without putting him in the terrible position of appearing ridiculous—that he had been awaiting the boyars so long in vain: that there were drunken mobs left in Moscow but no one else.

Book 11, Chapter 20

There were still a few people in Moscow but the city was empty. Moscow was like a dying queenless beehive.

Summary:

In this chapter Tolstoy describes an abandoned beehive in detail, using it as a metaphor for the abandoned city. When Napoleon reached Moscow it was like a beehive without a queen. He says that in a queenless hive no life is left although to a superficial glance it seems as much alive as other hives. Some bees will still remain in a deserted hive. Similarly, in various corners of Moscow there still remained a few people aimlessly moving about, following their old habits and hardly aware of what they were doing. But neither the evacuated city nor the deserted hive are alive in the sense of being normally functional. When with due circumspection Napoleon was informed that Moscow was empty, he looked angrily at his informant, turned away, and silently continued to walk to and fro. “Moscow deserted!” he said to himself. “What an incredible event!” He did not drive into the town, but put up at an inn in a suburb.

Quote from the chapter:

Meanwhile Moscow was empty. There were still people in it, perhaps a fiftieth part of its former inhabitants had remained, but it was empty. It was empty in the sense that a dying queenless hive is empty. In a queenless hive no life is left though to a superficial glance it seems as much alive as other hives. The bees circle round a queenless hive in the hot beams of the midday sun as gaily as around the living hives; from a distance it smells of honey like the others, and bees fly in and out in the same way. But one has only to observe that hive to realize that there is no longer any life in it.

Book 11, Chapter 21

Some of the Russian troops passing through Moscow that night looted shops in Red Square.

Summary:

When the Russian troops were passing through Moscow that night, they were delayed at the bridges. A great many soldiers turned back from the bridges and slipped stealthily and silently to the Red Square and began looting the shops. Crowds of soldiers entered the Bazaar empty-handed and emerged with big bundles of stolen goods. The few shopkeepers in the shops were helpless to stop this midnight looting. Their officers were unable to stop the men. Eventually, General Ermólov, coming up to the crowd and learning that soldiers were spilling into the shops while

crowds of civilians blocked the bridge, ordered two guns to make a show of firing at the bridge. The crowd, crushing one another, upsetting carts, and shouting and squeezing desperately, cleared the bridge and the troops were able to resume their midnight retreat through Moscow.

Quote from the chapter:

While the troops, dividing into two parts when passing around the Krémlin, were thronging the Moskvá and the Stone bridges, a great many soldiers, taking advantage of the stoppage and congestion, turned back from the bridges and slipped stealthily and silently past the church of Vasíli the Beatified and under the Borovítski gate, back up the hill to the Red Square where some instinct told them they could easily take things not belonging to them. Crowds of the kind seen at cheap sales filled all the passages and alleys of the Bazaar. But there were no dealers with voices of ingratiating affability inviting customers to enter; there were no hawkers, nor the usual motley crowd of female purchasers—but only soldiers, in uniforms and overcoats though without muskets, entering the Bazaar empty-handed and silently making their way out through its passages with bundles. Tradesmen and their assistants (of whom there were but few) moved about among the soldiers quite bewildered.

Book 11, Chapter 22

An unnamed, impoverished young officer who is related to Count Rostóv stops at the Rostóv house seeking assistance, and the housekeeper gives him 25 rubles.

Summary:

Moscow was nearly deserted. There was hardly anyone in the streets. In the great drawing room of the Rostóv house, were the yard porter Ignát, and the page boy Míshka. The two unsupervised boys were playing around with things in the room until the former housekeeper Mávra Kuzmínichna comes in sends them off. Just then, there is a knock at the gate. It is an impoverished young officer of eighteen, with the round face of a Rostóv, who says he is a kinsman of Count Rostóv's and has come seeking help. The young man bears a strong family resemblance to Count Rostóv. Mávra Kuzmínichna tells him the Count has left, but she gives the young man 25 rubles. He thanks her and leaves to catch up with his regiment.

Quote from the chapter:

"If his excellency had been at home, as a kinsman he would of course... but as it is..." Mávra Kuzmínichna grew abashed and confused. The officer did not decline, but took the (25 ruble) note quietly and thanked her. "If the count had been at home..." Mávra Kuzmínichna went on apologetically. "Christ be with you, sir! May God preserve you!" said she, bowing as she saw him out. Swaying his head and smiling as if amused at himself, the officer ran almost at a trot through the deserted streets toward the Yaúza bridge to overtake his regiment. But Mávra Kuzmínichna stood at the closed gate for some time with moist eyes, pensively swaying her head and feeling an unexpected flow of motherly tenderness and pity for the unknown young officer.

Book 11, Chapter 23

Disorderly crowds of working men read a government edict telling them to join tomorrow's battle. However, they begin to realize the battle is a hoax played on them by the authorities.

Summary:

That night, drunken and somewhat disorderly groups of working men roam Moscow's streets and pubs. They wonder if Moscow is to be given up to the French, something inconceivable to them. Someone reads a government edict issued in a broadsheet. According to the edict, they are to participate in a battle the next day against the French to defend Moscow. They encounter the superintendent of police, who had gone by Count Rostopchín's orders to burn the barges and had come away from that with a lot of misbegotten cash. The men tell the Superintendent they intend to fight, but he tells them little and departs quickly. The men begin to realize no battle to defend Moscow will take place. Having remained in the city as others have fled, the men have now been abandoned.

Quote from the chapter:

The superintendent of police turned round at that moment with a scared look, said something to his coachman, and his horses increased their speed. "It's a fraud, lads! Lead the way to him, himself!" shouted the tall youth. "Don't let him go, lads! Let him answer us! Keep him!" shouted different people and the people dashed in pursuit of the trap. Following the superintendent of police and talking loudly the crowd went in the direction of the Lubyánka Street. "There now, the gentry and merchants have gone away and left us to perish. Do they think we're dogs?" voices in the crowd were heard saying more and more frequently.

Book 11, Chapter 24

Rostopchín, who had thought himself an outstanding administrator of Moscow, becomes upset and blames others when the course of events shows this not to have been the case.

Summary:

Rostopchín is distressed, offended, and surprised when Kutúzov does not invite him to participate in the council of war, and when he realizes Kutúzov has no interest whatsoever in Rostopchín's offer to help defend Moscow. All Kutúzov wants is that Rostopchín send police officers to guide the troops as the army retreats through the town. Rostopchín should not have been surprised by this. He knew that Moscow would have to be abandoned, since all the generals after the battle of Borodinó told him it was impossible to fight. What really upset Rostopchín, in fact, was that he has been thinking of himself as a brilliant administrator who was running the city superbly. But the course of events and Kutúzov's actions to abandon Moscow made clear that Rostopchín had not acted well while commander in chief of Moscow. Rather than admit this, however, Rostopchín for the remainder of his life continued to blame others for his own poor judgements.

Quote from the chapter:

Ever since the enemy's entry into Smolénsk he had in imagination been playing the role of director of the popular feeling of "the heart of Russia." Not only did it seem to him (as to all administrators) that he controlled the external actions of Moscow's inhabitants, but he also thought he controlled their mental attitude by means of his broadsheets and posters, written in a coarse tone which the people despise in their own class and do not understand from those in authority. Rostopchín was so pleased with the fine role of leader of popular feeling, and had grown so used to it, that the necessity of relinquishing that role and abandoning Moscow without

any heroic display took him unawares and he suddenly felt the ground slip away from under his feet, so that he positively did not know what to do. Though he knew it was coming, he did not till the last moment wholeheartedly believe that Moscow would be abandoned, and did not prepare for it. The inhabitants left against his wishes. If the government offices were removed, this was only done on the demand of officials to whom the count yielded reluctantly. He was absorbed in the role he had created for himself. As is often the case with those gifted with an ardent imagination, though he had long known that Moscow would be abandoned he knew it only with his intellect, he did not believe it in his heart and did not adapt himself mentally to this new position of affairs.

Book 11, Chapter 25

Rostopchín turns the prisoner Vereshchágin over to the mob to be brutally beaten and killed, although Vereshchágin was sentenced only to hard labor.

Summary:

Rostopchín now realizes the situation in Moscow is out of his control. When he is about to flee the city, a dangerous, angry mob has gathered outside his house. They are on the verge of violence, and Rostopchín sees that the mob wants a victim. He goes out and tells them "This man, Vereshchágin, is the scoundrel by whose doing Moscow is perishing." Then Rostopchín hands Vereshchágin over to the mob to be killed. Vereshchágin pleads to Rostopchín One God is above us both... but Rostopchín is unmoved. He watches the helpless young man being beaten to death. Then, Rostopchín slips away to his country estate. He momentarily feels guilt, but rationalizing that what he did was for the good of the people, Rostopchín becomes self-satisfied. His carriage passes a lunatic raving as though he was the Christ crucified. He later goes to see Kutúzov, but Kutúzov appears unconcerned with Rostopchín's complaints and enigmatically gives him a nonsense answer.

Quote from the chapter:

When they reached the Myasnítski Street and could no longer hear the shouts of the mob, the count began to repent. He remembered with dissatisfaction the agitation and fear he had betrayed before his subordinates. "The mob is terrible—disgusting," he said to himself in French. "They are like wolves whom nothing but flesh can appease." "Count! One God is above us both!"—Vereshchágin's words suddenly recurred to him, and a disagreeable shiver ran down his back. But this was only a momentary feeling and Count Rostopchín smiled disdainfully at himself. "I had other duties," thought he. "The people had to be appeased. Many other victims have perished and are perishing for the public good"—and he began thinking of his social duties to his family and to the city entrusted to him, and of himself—not himself as Theodore Vasílyevich Rostopchín (he fancied that Theodore Vasílyevich Rostopchín was sacrificing himself for the public good) but himself as governor, the representative of authority and of the Tsar. "Had I been simply Theodore Vasílyevich my course of action would have been quite different, but it was my duty to safeguard my life and dignity as commander in chief."

Book 11, Chapter 26

Napoleon's army enters Moscow, meeting only trivial resistance. Once dispersed in the city, the men forever cease being soldiers. They turn into mere marauders. Carelessness, not arson, results in Moscow's burning.

Summary:

Murat's troops enter Moscow followed by a detachment of hussars and behind them Napoleon and his suite. Still expecting a counter attack, the French ask some Russian civilians where the Russian army can be found. Someone reports the Krémlin is barricaded. Murat moves on the Krémlin where they encounter only a tiny group of patriotic defenders, who Murat quickly destroys. Although the French marched into Moscow as an organized army, five weeks later when these men left Moscow, they were no longer an army. They had become only a mob of marauders. They became looters, nothing more. French officers issued order after order to the men, which were ignored. The French officers could never again establish military order. And since Moscow's buildings were wooden, it had no fire engines, and careless soldiers cooked on open campfires everywhere, the city burned. This wasn't arson, just the accidental conflagrations unavoidable under such conditions.

Quote from the chapter:

As soon as the men of the various regiments began to disperse among the wealthy and deserted houses, the army was lost forever and there came into being something nondescript, neither citizens nor soldiers but what are known as marauders. When five weeks later these same men left Moscow, they no longer formed an army. They were a mob of marauders, each carrying a quantity of articles which seemed to him valuable or useful. The aim of each man when he left Moscow was no longer, as it had been, to conquer, but merely to keep what he had acquired. Like a monkey which puts its paw into the narrow neck of a jug, and having seized a handful of nuts will not open its fist for fear of losing what it holds, and therefore perishes, the French when they left Moscow had inevitably to perish because they carried their loot with them, yet to abandon what they had stolen was as impossible for them as it is for the monkey to open its paw and let go of its nuts.

Book 11, Chapter 27

Pierre spent two days at Bazdéev's house, and began to imagine killing Napoleon.

Summary:

As the French soldiers spread throughout Moscow, Pierre spent two days alone in Bazdéev's house, where he drifted into an odd mental state bordering on insanity. Having been asked to organize Bazdéev's papers, Pierre had gone to his deceased friend's house seeking refuge from the chaos of his own life. He tried to review the papers, but soon drifted into many daydreams. He got a pistol and peasants clothes to take part in the battle to save Moscow alongside the peasants he so admired, but that battle never happened. Eventually he became completely obsessed by one persistent thought, his old contrived numerological prediction, and he started imagining assassinating Napoleon. While Pierre was thinking about this, Bazdéev's half-crazy old brother came in and snatched Pierre's pistol off his table. As the servants were attempting to take the pistol away from this delusional old alcoholic, they are startled to hear several men knocking at the door of the house.

Quote from the chapter:

—all this kept him in a state of excitement bordering on insanity. It was two o'clock in the afternoon. The French had already entered Moscow. Pierre knew this, but instead of acting he only thought about his undertaking, going over its minutest details in his mind. In his fancy he did not clearly picture to himself either the striking of the blow or the death of Napoleon, but with extraordinary vividness and melancholy enjoyment imagined his own destruction and heroic endurance. "Yes, alone, for the sake of all, I must do it or perish!" he thought. "Yes, I will approach... and then suddenly... with pistol or dagger? But that is all the same! 'It is not I but the hand of Providence that punishes thee,' I shall say," thought he, imagining what he would say when killing Napoleon. "Well then, take me and execute me!" he went on, speaking to himself and bowing his head with a sad but firm expression

Book 11, Chapter 28

Some French soldiers arrive at Bazdéev's house seeking lodging. Pierre tackles the crazy old man before he can shoot the French officer.

Summary:

Two French soldiers come into the Bazdéev house saying they are looking for quarters. No one in the house speaks French except Pierre, and he pretends not to understand them. While this is going on Bazdéev's brother, who still has the pistol, comes into the room and points it at the French officer. Pierre sees this just in time and tackles the crazy old man. The old man fires the pistol but misses the officer. Pierre stops pretending he doesn't speak French and asks the officer if he is ok. The French officer wants to punish the old man, but Pierre explains that the old man is not mentally competent. Out of appreciation to Pierre, the officer agrees not to punish the old man. Then the soldiers settle in to dine on the food they find in the kitchen.

Quote from the chapter:

at that moment he saw Makár Alexéevich appearing at the open kitchen door with the pistol in his hand. With a madman's cunning, Makár Alexéevich eyed the Frenchman, raised his pistol, and took aim. "Board them!" yelled the tipsy man, trying to press the trigger. Hearing the yell the officer turned round, and at the same moment Pierre threw himself on the drunkard. Just when Pierre snatched at and struck up the pistol Makár Alexéevich at last got his fingers on the trigger, there was a deafening report, and all were enveloped in a cloud of smoke. The Frenchman turned pale and rushed to the door. Forgetting his intention of concealing his knowledge of French, Pierre, snatching away the pistol and throwing it down, ran up to the officer and addressed him in French. "You are not wounded?" he asked. "I think not," answered the Frenchman, feeling himself over. "But I have had a lucky escape this time,

Book 11, Chapter 29

Pierre and the affable French officer sit talking the whole evening about many things but mostly about love and women. Eventually Pierre truthfully tells the officer the entire story of his life.

Summary:

The amiable French officer sits down to eat with Pierre. At first not wishing to be there, Pierre is won over by the friendly, outgoing manner of the officer, and they talk for a long time. They talk about battles, about women, and about Paris. Pierre involuntarily enjoyed talking with this cheerful and good-natured man. The French officer tells Pierre about his love life, and about how much he admires Napoleon. The wine and pleasant conversation cause Pierre to realize he could never actually go through with his plan of assassinating Napoleon. This in turn makes Pierre feel weak. They talk much more for a long time about all sorts of things, but mostly about women. Hearing about the French officers' lovers, Pierre remembers Natásha. Pierre realizes his last meeting with Natásha had had in it something very important and poetic. Pierre opens up and honestly tells the French officer the whole story of his life. Outside they see a distant fire in the city. Then the tipsy Pierre, without saying goodnight, wanders off and falls asleep on a sofa.

Quote from the chapter:

When he had reached this point, Pierre asked the captain whether he understood that. The captain made a gesture signifying that even if he did not understand it he begged Pierre to continue. "Platónic love, clouds..." he muttered. Whether it was the wine he had drunk, or an impulse of frankness, or the thought that this man did not, and never would, know any of those who played a part in his story, or whether it was all these things together, something loosened Pierre's tongue. Speaking thickly and with a faraway look in his shining eyes, he told the whole story of his life: his marriage, Natásha's love for his best friend, her betrayal of him, and all his own simple relations with her. Urged on by Ramballe's questions he also told what he had at first concealed—his own position and even his name. More than anything else in Pierre's story the captain was impressed by the fact that Pierre was very rich, had two mansions in Moscow, and that he had abandoned everything and not left the city, but remained there concealing his name and station.

Book 11, Chapter 30

On their second night on the road, the Rostóv family and the wounded men traveling with them first see Moscow burning in the distance.

Summary:

The glow of the first fire that began on the second of September was watched from the various roads by the fugitive Muscovites and by the retreating troops. The Rostóv family, traveling with many wounded in their party, sadly saw the fires on their second night out. Due to crowding on the roads and other delays, the Rostóv's only managed to cover 14 miles in their first two days on the road. Some of the wounded soldiers in their party are in great pain. At ten o'clock that evening the Rostóv family and the wounded traveling with them were all distributed in the yards and huts of a large village. They see a fire in the distance and realize their beloved Moscow is burning.

Quote from the chapter:

"But what do you think, Daniel Teréntich? Doesn't it look as if that glow were in Moscow?" remarked one of the footmen. Daniel Teréntich made no reply, and again for a long time they were all silent. The glow spread, rising and falling, farther and farther still. "God have mercy.... It's windy and dry..." said another voice. "Just look! See what it's doing now. O Lord! You can even see the crows flying. Lord have mercy on us sinners!" "They'll put it out, no fear!" "Who's to put it out?" Daniel Teréntich, who had hitherto been silent, was heard to say. His voice was calm and deliberate. "Moscow it is, brothers," said he. "Mother Moscow, the white..." his voice faltered, and he gave way to an old man's sob. And it was as if they had all only waited for this to realize

the significance for them of the glow they were watching. Sighs were heard, words of prayer, and the sobbing of the count's old valet.

Book 11, Chapter 31

Natásha learns Prince Andrew is among the wounded traveling with them. That night, she sneaks into Andrew's sickroom to see him.

Summary:

Sónya for some unaccountable reason found it necessary to tell Natásha Prince Andrew was seriously wounded, although expected to survive, and was with their party. This greatly angered the Countess, who worried the news would upset Natásha. It did profoundly effect her, sending her into a condition of stupor. After she had been told that she could not see him, Natásha ceased to speak or ask questions all day, or to be interested in anything, not even the rapidly spreading Moscow fires visible in the distance that night. Although forbidden by her mother to do so, Natásha resolved to see him. After Sónya and the Countess were asleep Natásha slipped out quietly to see the Prince, who was in a part of the hut across the passage. Seeing him, Natásha went up to his bed and dropped on her knees. Prince Andrew smiled and held out his hand to her.

Quote from the chapter:

She passed the valet, the snuff fell from the candle wick, and she saw Prince Andrew clearly with his arms outside the quilt, and such as she had always seen him. He was the same as ever, but the feverish color of his face, his glittering eyes rapturously turned toward her, and especially his neck, delicate as a child's, revealed by the turn-down collar of his shirt, gave him a peculiarly innocent, childlike look, such as she had never seen on him before. She went up to him and with a swift, flexible, youthful movement dropped on her knees. He smiled and held out his hand to her.

Book 11, Chapter 32

Andrew, still extremely ill but not forgetting his experience of universal love at the medical tent, tells Natásha he forgives her and loves her more than before.

Summary:

Not until seven days after the battle of Borodinó did Prince Andrew regain consciousness. He was still feverish, in great pain, and sometimes delirious, but there were signs of improvement and he had begun to take some nourishment. His doctor still worried he might not survive, though. He hadn't yet recovered his ability to keep his mind focused on anything for long. He still remembers the overwhelming consciousness of universal love and forgiveness he had experienced after seeing Anatole in the medical tent. He forgave totally Natásha and wished he could see her. When he sees something white in his room he first believes it's a hallucination. But, realizing Natásha is actually present, he tells her he totally forgives her and loves her now more than before. From then on, whenever the caravan stopped, Natásha was by his side helping to care for him. However, due to the huge unsettled questions of life and death, which hung not only over Bolkónski but overall Russia shutting out all other considerations, Natásha and Andrew never spoke about resuming their engagement.

Quote from the chapter:

I experienced that feeling of love which is the very essence of the soul and does not require an object. Now again I feel that bliss. To love one's neighbors, to love one's enemies, to love everything, to love God in all His manifestations. It is possible to love someone dear to you with human love, but an enemy can only be loved by divine love. That is why I experienced such joy when I felt that I loved that man. What has become of him? Is he alive?..."When loving with human love one may pass from love to hatred, but divine love cannot change. No, neither death nor anything else can destroy it. It is the very essence of the soul. Yet how many people have I hated in my life? And of them all, I loved and hated none as I did her." And he vividly pictured to himself Natásha, not as he had done in the past with nothing but her charms which gave him delight, but for the first time picturing to himself her soul. And he understood her feelings, her sufferings, shame, and remorse. He now understood for the first time all the cruelty of his rejection of her, the cruelty of his rupture with her. "If only it were possible for me to see her once more! Just once, looking into those eyes to say...

Book 11, Chapter 33

Pierre sets out to kill Napoleon but instead stops and helps rescue a small child from a burning house.

Summary:

When Pierre awakes the next day, he takes a dagger and sets out on his half-baked plan to kill Napoleon. He doubts he can do it, but he wants to prove to himself that he has the nerve to try. In fact, Napoleon is somewhere else at the time. Seeing Pierre, people on the street don't know what to make of him. Pierre himself hardly notices his surroundings. There is smoke everywhere, and the French are looting. But Pierre happens upon a sobbing woman whose young daughter is trapped in a burning building. This snaps Pierre back to himself and he agrees to try to rescue the young girl. He goes into the burning building, and with the help of some French soldiers who are at that moment looting the house, he manages to find the girl who has hidden herself in the garden. Pierre picks up the wet, painfully sobbing child to himself as tenderly as he could and runs with her looking for a way out, as it was now impossible to go back the way he had entered.

Quote from the chapter:

He heard nothing and saw nothing of what went on around him. He carried his resolution within himself in terror and haste, like something dreadful and alien to him, for, after the previous night's experience, he was afraid of losing it. But he was not destined to bring his mood safely to his destination. And even had he not been hindered by anything on the way, his intention could not now have been carried out, for Napoleon had passed the Arbát more than four hours previously on his way from the Dorogomílov suburb to the Krémlin, and was now sitting in a very gloomy frame of mind in a royal study in the Krémlin, giving detailed and exact orders as to measures to be taken immediately to extinguish the fire, to prevent looting, and to reassure the inhabitants. But Pierre did not know this; he was entirely absorbed in what lay before him, and was tortured—as those are who obstinately undertake a task that is impossible for them not because of its difficulty but because of its incompatibility with their natures—by the fear of weakening at the decisive moment and so losing his self-esteem.

Book 11, Chapter 34

After rescuing the child from the burning building, Pierre cannot find her mother. He fights with a looter and is arrested.

Summary:

Pierre manages to get the child out of the burning house. He hurries to find the family. Pierre felt that he had still much to do and to do quickly. But now he cannot find the girl's mother in the crowd which has gathered around the house. He asks if anyone knows her. Nearby, Pierre sees French looters robbing an Armenian family in the street. He sees one looter tearing from her neck a necklace a beautiful young Armenian was wearing. Pierre hands the girl to a neighbor and attacks and beats the looter. A French Patrol sent out to restore order sees the fight and stops it. Pierre remembered nothing of what happened after that. He only remembered beating someone and being beaten and finally feeling that his hands were bound and that a crowd of French soldiers stood around him and were searching him. They realize Pierre is carrying a dagger. Thinking he is an incendiary, the patrol arrests Pierre and marches him off to their guardhouse. Unaccountably, Pierre tells the soldiers the girl he rescued is his daughter.

Quote from the chapter:

"Who are you?" asked the interpreter in poor Russian. "You must answer the chief." "I will not tell you who I am. I am your prisoner—take me!" Pierre suddenly replied in French. "Ah, ah!" muttered the officer with a frown. "Well then, march!" A crowd had collected round the Uhlans. Nearest to Pierre stood the pockmarked peasant woman with the little girl, and when the patrol started she moved forward. "Where are they taking you to, you poor dear?" said she. "And the little girl, the little girl, what am I to do with her if she's not theirs?" said the woman. "What does that woman want?" asked the officer. Pierre was as if intoxicated. His elation increased at the sight of the little girl he had saved. "What does she want?" he murmured. "She is bringing me my daughter whom I have just saved from the flames," said he. "Good-by!" And without knowing how this aimless lie had escaped him, he went along with resolute and triumphant steps between the French soldiers.

Book 12, Chapter 1

Upper-class in Petersburg hardly notices Russia's terrible situation. High society social life was continuing just as before. Anna's soirées continue.. But Hélène had become seriously ill after her recent remarriage.

Summary:

Only in certain factions of the very highest circles of Petersburg society were attempts now being made to keep in mind the difficulties of the actual Russian position. For most of the Petersburg upper-class, however, the calm, luxurious life of Petersburg, concerned only about phantoms and reflections of real life, went on in its old way, seeming almost unaware of the dangers currently facing the Russian people. For example, on the day of the battle of Borodinó, Anna Pávlovna hosted one of her famous soirées. This night, Prince Vasíli read to Anna's guests a patriotic letter their bishop had sent the Emperor along with a gift of a religious icon. People talked a lot about Hélène's health. She had become very ill after her second marriage. Bilíbin cleverly quipped about

some Austrian banners Russia was sending back to their erstwhile ally. Hippolyte made his usual annoying jokes. And Anna Pávlovna's guests talked for a long time of the state of the fatherland and offered various conjectures as to the result of the battle to be fought in a few days, which Anna thought would go quite well for Russia.

Quote from the chapter:

The news of the day in Petersburg was the illness of Countess Bezúkhova. She had fallen ill unexpectedly a few days previously, had missed several gatherings of which she was usually the ornament, and was said to be receiving no one, and instead of the celebrated Petersburg doctors who usually attended her had entrusted herself to some Italian doctor who was treating her in some new and unusual way. They all knew very well that the enchanting countess' illness arose from an inconvenience resulting from marrying two husbands at the same time, and that the Italian's cure consisted in removing such inconvenience; but in Anna Pávlovna's presence no one dared to think of this or even appear to know it. "They say the poor countess is very ill. The doctor says it is angina pectoris." "Angina? Oh, that's a terrible illness!" "They say that the rivals are reconciled, thanks to the angina..." and the word angina was repeated with great satisfaction. "The count is pathetic, they say. He cried like a child when the doctor told him the case was dangerous." "Oh, it would be a terrible loss, she is an enchanting woman."

Book 12, Chapter 2

The first reports from the battle of Borodinó cause celebration in Petersburg, but later learning of Moscow's fall plunges the city into dismay. The Emperor sends for a full report from Kutúzov. Hélène dies around this time.

Summary:

Next day, in a quickly written letter before he had complete information, Kutúzov reported the good news from Borodinó that the Russians had not retreated, and that the French losses were much heavier than the Russian losses. Everyone took this to mean the Russians had trounced Napoleon. A joyously festive mood reigned in Petersburg. This happened on the Emperor's birthday, which seemed a wonderful coincidence. It made Kutúzov a great Russian hero. But the next day no news arrived from the army and the public mood grew anxious. Also, that day, Countess Hélène suddenly died. It was rumored that Hélène, emotionally upset due to tension with her father and complete silence from Pierre, had died in agony after taking an overdose. Talk in Petersburg centered round three melancholy facts: the Emperor's lack of news, the death of a popular general, and the death of Hélène. On the third day news of the surrender of Moscow to the French arrived and the mood in the city changed totally. As long as the reports were unofficial, it was possible to doubt it. But a letter from Count Rostopchín confirmed the bad news. Now, Kutúzov was seen as an incompetent old goat. Upon receiving Rostopchín's letter, the astonished Emperor sent someone to find out from Kutúzov the situation of the army and why Kutúzov had not tried to stop the French from entering Moscow.

Quote from the chapter:

On the third day after Kutúzov's report a country gentleman arrived from Moscow, and news of the surrender of Moscow to the French spread through the whole town. This was terrible! What a position for the Emperor to be in! Kutúzov was a traitor, and Prince Vasíli during the visits of condolence paid to him on the occasion of his daughter's death said of Kutúzov, whom he had formerly praised (it was excusable for him in his grief to forget what he had said), that it was

impossible to expect anything else from a blind and depraved old man. "I only wonder that the fate of Russia could have been entrusted to such a man."

Book 12, Chapter 3

A messenger from Kutúzov explains to the Emperor that there was no choice but to surrender Moscow, but that the army is burning to continue fighting. The Emperor says he will never make peace with Napoleon.

Summary:

Nine days after the abandonment of Moscow, Kutúzov sent a messenger named Michaud with a report to the Emperor. Michaud told the Emperor that it had been impossible to fight before Moscow. Defending Moscow would have meant losing both Moscow and the army. So Kutúzov actually had no choice but to save the army. Consequently, Moscow was now in ashes. The Emperor asks Michaud about the army. He tells the Emperor that the army is burning to keep fighting. The troops are ready to sacrifice their lives. Michaud says the army is only worried that the Emperor will be persuaded to make peace with Napoleon. The Emperor assures Michaud he will never disgrace Russia by making peace with Napoleon. It's a battle to the death. It's Napoleon or I,", the Emperor tells Michaud, "We can no longer both reign together. I have learned to know him, and he will not deceive me any more....". Michaud replies "Your Majesty is at this moment signing the glory of the nation and the salvation of Europe!" And, with an inclination of the head the Emperor dismissed Michaud.

Quote from the chapter:

"Have you brought me sad news, Colonel?" "Very sad, sire," replied Michaud, lowering his eyes with a sigh. "The abandonment of Moscow." "Have they surrendered my ancient capital without a battle?" asked the Emperor quickly, his face suddenly flushing. Michaud respectfully delivered the message Kutúzov had entrusted to him, which was that it had been impossible to fight before Moscow, and that as the only remaining choice was between losing the army as well as Moscow, or losing Moscow alone, the field marshal had to choose the latter. The Emperor listened in silence, not looking at Michaud. "Has the enemy entered the city?" he asked. "Yes, sire, and Moscow is now in ashes. I left it all in flames," replied Michaud in a decided tone, but glancing at the Emperor he was frightened by what he had done. The Emperor began to breathe heavily and rapidly, his lower lip trembled, and tears instantly appeared in his fine blue eyes.

Book 12, Chapter 4

Nicholas enjoys a trip to the country to buy horses for the army. That evening he attends a dance at the home of the local military governor, where he amuses himself by ostentatiously flirting with a married woman.

Summary:

Contrary to what one might expect, the most useful people living through major historical events tend to stay focused on their own daily lives, and not think much about the big historical picture. Nicholas and the Russian army were this way. Within Kutúzov's army there was little talk or

thought about the loss of Moscow. When the army caught sight of the city's burned ruins, no one swore to be avenged on the French. They instead thought about normal army concerns like their next pay or their next quarters. Similarly, if Nicholas Rostóv had been asked then what he thought of the state of Russia, he would have said that it was not his business to think about it, that Kutúzov and others were there for that purpose. So, when about this time Nicholas was sent to purchase some horses in the country, he did so in a somewhat light hearted manner, glad to be getting away from camp for a few days. He went to visit a particularly good horse breeder in the country. That night there was an informal dance at the house of the local military governor. The dashing Nicholas, a charming bachelor who danced very well, impressed all the women at the dance. Nicholas amused himself at the party by ostentatiously flirting with an attractive married woman. This amused the woman, but didn't at all amuse her husband, who gradually grew more sullen as she became more animated.

Quote from the chapter:

dancing began in which Nicholas still further captivated the provincial society by his agility. His particularly free manner of dancing even surprised them all. Nicholas was himself rather surprised at the way he danced that evening. He had never danced like that in Moscow and would even have considered such a very free and easy manner improper and in bad form, but here he felt it incumbent on him to astonish them all by something unusual, something they would have to accept as the regular thing in the capital though new to them in the provinces. All the evening Nicholas paid attention to a blue-eyed, plump and pleasing little blonde, the wife of one of the provincial officials. With the naïve conviction of young men in a merry mood that other men's wives were created for them, Rostóv did not leave the lady's side and treated her husband in a friendly and conspiratorial style, as if, without speaking of it, they knew how capitally Nicholas and the lady would get on together. The husband, however, did not seem to share that conviction and tried to behave morosely with Rostóv. But the latter's good-natured naïveté was so boundless that sometimes even he involuntarily yielded to Nicholas' good humor.

Book 12, Chapter 5

When someone offers to arrange a marriage between Nicholas and Princess Mary, Nicholas is open to the idea despite his former promise to Sónya.

Summary:

At the dance, the Governor's wife offers to try to make a match between Nicholas and Princess Mary. Nicholas's initial reaction is to not oppose the idea. After dinner the two have another chat. Nicholas says he does not want to marry for money, but he likes Princess Mary very much, and he thinks it might be his fate to marry her. Still, though, Nicholas has some reservations. He brings up his earlier promise to Sónya, who he does love. But the matchmaker points out that Sónya has nothing and Count Rostóv's financial affairs are in a very bad way. She points out this would be no sort of life, that it would just mean heartbreak and ruin for the family. Sónya ought to understand this, she says. These arguments seem to convince Nicholas. So, the two agree that the matchmaker will try to arrange the marriage of Nicholas' to Princess Mary.

Quote from the chapter:

"You know Sónya, my cousin? I love her, and promised to marry her, and will do so.... So you see there can be no question about—" said Nicholas incoherently and blushing. "My dear boy, what a way to look at it! You know Sónya has nothing and you yourself say your Papa's affairs are in a

very bad way. And what about your mother? It would kill her, that's one thing. And what sort of life would it be for Sónya—if she's a girl with a heart? Your mother in despair, and you all ruined.... No, my dear, you and Sónya ought to understand that." Nicholas remained silent. It comforted him to hear these arguments. "All the same, Aunt, it is impossible," he rejoined with a sigh, after a short pause. "Besides, would the princess have me? And besides, she is now in mourning. How can one think of it!"

Book 12, Chapter 6

Plans for a projected match between Mary and Nicholas move forward. Both seem very pleased with the idea. Still, for some reason, Nicholas just cannot picture himself married to her.

Summary:

Princess Mary had settled into a new house and was doing her best to deal with all her recent losses and worries. She had already managed her feelings related to her rescue by Nicholas. Then, as promised, the governor's wife spoke with Mary's aunt about a possible marriage. Since Mary was still in mourning for her father, propriety required a very low-key courtship. But it was agreed Nicholas would visit the house. From the time Rostóv entered her house, Mary's face became suddenly transformed. Nicholas saw in her an unexpected and striking beauty. Both he and Mary seemed very attracted to one another, and both appeared open to the idea of marriage. Nicholas yielded to the power he felt was irresistibly carrying him into the marriage. A day was established when Nicholas was to declare his feelings for her. But, for some unknown reason, Nicholas simply could not picture his future married life with Mary. This made him afraid.

Quote from the chapter:

After meeting Princess Mary, though the course of his life went on externally as before, all his former amusements lost their charm for him and he often thought about her. But he never thought about her as he had thought of all the young ladies without exception whom he had met in society, nor as he had for a long time, and at one time rapturously, thought about Sónya. He had pictured each of those young ladies as almost all honest-hearted young men do, that is, as a possible wife, adapting her in his imagination to all the conditions of married life: a white dressing gown, his wife at the tea table, his wife's carriage, little ones, Mamma and Papa, their relations to her, and so on—and these pictures of the future had given him pleasure. But with Princess Mary, to whom they were trying to get him engaged, he could never picture anything of future married life.

Book 12, Chapter 7

Nicholas' prays to be released from his commitment to Sónya, and suddenly his prayer is answered. Mary goes to find Prince Andrew.

Summary:

The dreadful news of the battle of Borodinó reached Nicholas. He hurries to finish buying the horses so he can return to his regiment. A few days before his departure, Nicholas runs into Princess Mary in the cathedral. He notices her striking moral beauty. Mary is also about to leave town, to look for Prince Andrew. She only knows her brother has been wounded, and worries he

might be dead. To comfort her, Nicholas tells Mary if her brother had died it would have been announced in the Gazette. He tells her its possible Andrew isn't badly wounded. Later that evening, Nicholas realizes he loves Mary much more than he ever loved Sónya. He prays sincerely to God to be released from his promise to wed Sónya. Just then, his servant walks in with two letters. The first, from Sónya, releases Nicholas from his promise. The second letter, from his mother, tells him Andrew is traveling with the Rostóv family. The next day Nicholas lets Mary know where Andrew is, and sees her off on her journey. A few days later Nicholas leaves to rejoin his regiment.

Quote from the chapter:

Why don't I pray for what I want?" he suddenly thought. "What do I want? To be free, released from Sónya... She was right," he thought, remembering what the governor's wife had said: "Nothing but misfortune can come of marrying Sónya. Muddles, grief for Mamma... business difficulties... muddles, terrible muddles! Besides, I don't love her—not as I should. O, God! release me from this dreadful, inextricable position!" he suddenly began to pray. "Yes, prayer can move mountains, but one must have faith and not pray as Natásha and I used to as children, that the snow might turn into sugar—and then run out into the yard to see whether it had done so. No, but I am not praying for trifles now," he thought as he put his pipe down in a corner, and folding his hands placed himself before the icon. Softened by memories of Princess Mary he began to pray as he had not done for a long time. Tears were in his eyes and in his throat when the door opened and Lavrúshka came in with some papers.

Book 12, Chapter 8

An imagined vision induces the superstitious Sónya to yield to pressure from Countess Rostóv and release Nicholas from his promise to marry her.

Summary:

This chapter describes the series of events leading to Sónya writing the letter releasing Nicholas from his promise to marry Sónya. It wasn't solely a matter of pressure from the Countess. Countess Rostóv had been putting very intense pressure on Sónya for a long time to release Nicholas so that he would be free to marry Princess Mary. Sónya habitually assumed a self-sacrificing role within the Rostóv family. But not this time! Sónya really wanted Nicholas to marry her, no matter what the Countess wanted. However, Sónya was also aware that Nicholas would be unable to marry Princess Mary if Andrew and Natásha were married first. This was due to prohibited degrees of affinity. If Andrew and Natásha married, this would make Princess Mary and Nicholas in-laws. And, apparently, in that society such marriages between in-laws were prohibited. Sónya thinks that Andrew is recovering and will probably be able to marry Natásha. Next, Sónya foolishly thinks a vision confirms that Natásha and Andrew will definitely marry, preventing Nicholas and Princess Mary from wedding. In fact, it wasn't an actual vision at all. Rather, Sónya simply let her imagination run away with her. She mostly just imagines seeing this vision. But, trusting that Nicholas will be unable to marry the Princess in any event due to prohibited degrees of affinity, Sónya adopts a dutiful demeanor and agrees to write a letter releasing Nicholas from his promise and freeing him to marry Princess Mary. All of this is what prompted Sónya to write the letter to Nicholas.

Quote from the chapter:

"Sónya, won't you write to Nicholas?" She spoke in a soft, tremulous voice, and in the weary eyes that looked over her spectacles Sónya read all that the countess meant to convey with these words. Those eyes expressed entreaty, shame at having to ask, fear of a refusal, and readiness for relentless hatred in case of such refusal. Sónya went up to the countess and, kneeling down, kissed her hand. "Yes, Mamma, I will write," said she. Sónya was softened, excited, and touched by all that had occurred that day, especially by the mysterious fulfillment she had just seen of her vision. Now that she knew that the renewal of Natásha's relations with Prince Andrew would prevent Nicholas from marrying Princess Mary, she was joyfully conscious of a return of that self-sacrificing spirit in which she was accustomed to live and loved to live.

Book 12, Chapter 9

After being arrested, Pierre is detained with other suspected Russian incendiaries for some days and questioned while the French soldiers guarding the prison await a decision from a French Marshal.

Summary:

Pierre is held in custody for about ten days while they await a decision from a French Marshall. In the guardhouse, Pierre does not give his name, but he stands out as an upper class person who speaks French very well. The other prisoners are from the lower classes. The police suspect he and the other prisoners are incendiaries. When interviewing the prisoners, the police examiners seem interested in only finding incriminating evidence against them. Once, when after four days they were being moved to a different house, the prisoners see fires all around them but don't understand the significance of these fires. The soldiers holding them prisoner are awaiting a decision which might come any day from the marshal. These first days in captivity, while the prisoners were awaiting a second examination, were the hardest of all for Pierre.

Quote from the chapter:

And so, as they had the power and wish to inculpate him, this expedient of an inquiry and trial seemed unnecessary. It was evident that any answer would lead to conviction. When asked what he was doing when he was arrested, Pierre replied in a rather tragic manner that he was restoring to its parents a child he had saved from the flames. Why had he fought the marauder? Pierre answered that he "was protecting a woman," and that "to protect a woman who was being insulted was the duty of every man; that..." They interrupted him, for this was not to the point. Why was he in the yard of a burning house where witnesses had seen him? He replied that he had gone out to see what was happening in Moscow. Again they interrupted him: they had not asked where he was going, but why he was found near the fire? Who was he? they asked, repeating their first question, which he had declined to answer. Again he replied that he could not answer it. "Put that down, that's bad... very bad," sternly remarked the general with the white mustache and red flushed face.

Book 12, Chapter 10

Pierre is examined by the French marshal. The marshal is called away on business. The prisoners are led away. Pierre fears the guards may be taking him and the other prisoners to be executed.

Summary:

On the eighth of September Pierre with thirteen other prisoners were tidied up to be walked over to be examined by the French marshal. Once outside, as far as Pierre could see on all sides, all Moscow appeared one vast charred ruin. Pierre could see the French military bustling about everywhere he looked over the ruined and destroyed city. The few Russians to be seen were tattered and frightened people who tried to hide when they saw the French. Pierre and the other prisoners were taken into a large house to be examined by the marshal, the Duke of Eckmühl (Davout). Pierre was the sixth to enter. Davout accuses Pierre of being a Russian spy, but Pierre says he is merely a militia officer who did not flee the city. Worried he will be executed; Pierre tries to offer Davout any facts he can think of to establish his identity. Davout does not believe him. Then, just as Davout and Pierre begin to form a human connection, Davout is called away on business. Pierre and the other prisoners are led away. Pierre fears the French are going to execute him and his fellow prisoners.

Quote from the chapter:

"What proof have I that you are not lying?" "Monseigneur!" exclaimed Pierre, not in an offended but in a pleading voice. Davout looked up and gazed intently at him. For some seconds they looked at one another, and that look saved Pierre. Apart from conditions of war and law, that look established human relations between the two men. At that moment an immense number of things passed dimly through both their minds, and they realized that they were both children of humanity and were brothers. At the first glance, when Davout had only raised his head from the papers where human affairs and lives were indicated by numbers, Pierre was merely a circumstance, and Davout could have shot him without burdening his conscience with an evil deed, but now he saw in him a human being. He reflected for a moment. "How can you show me that you are telling the truth?" said Davout coldly. Pierre remembered Ramballe, and named him and his regiment and the street where the house was. "You are not what you say," returned Davout.

Book 12, Chapter 11

French sharpshooters begin to execute the prisoners. Pierre expects to be next. However, after the man ahead of Pierre is shot, the executions cease. Pierre and those behind him in line were only brought there as witnesses.

Summary:

The prisoners were led to a spot where a fresh pit had been dug. Around the pit was a large crowd of civilians and off-duty military. To the right and left of the post stood rows of French troops. The prisoners were placed in a certain order, (Pierre was sixth), and were led to the post. Several drums suddenly began to beat on both sides of them, and at that sound Pierre felt as if part of his soul had been torn away. Now Pierre only wished that the frightful thing would happen quickly. The first two prisoners were tied to the post. With hurried hands the soldiers blindfolded them, drawing sacks over their heads, and bound them to the post, and shot. Their bloody bodies were untied and pushed into the pit. Then the next two men were tied to the post, shot by a firing squad, and their bodies also shoved into the pit. The fifth prisoner, the one ahead of Pierre in line, was then tied to the post and shot. With ever-growing horror, and no sense of joy or relief, he gazed at what was taking place, expecting to be next. But, at that point, the executions ceased. It turned out that Pierre and the prisoners behind him in line had been brought there only to witness the executions of these five men. Although some of the men in the pit were still alive, their bodies

were covered with dirt. Those doing the killing all plainly and certainly knew that they were criminals who must hide the traces of their guilt as quickly as possible.

Quote from the chapter:

Pierre, breathing heavily, looked around as if asking what it meant. The same question was expressed in all the looks that met his. On the faces of all the Russians and of the French soldiers and officers without exception, he read the same dismay, horror, and conflict that were in his own heart. "But who, after all, is doing this? They are all suffering as I am. Who then is it? Who?" flashed for an instant through his mind. "Sharpshooters of the 86th, forward!" shouted someone. The fifth prisoner, the one next to Pierre, was led away—alone. Pierre did not understand that he was saved, that he and the rest had been brought there only to witness the execution. With ever-growing horror, and no sense of joy or relief, he gazed at what was taking place.

Book 12, Chapter 12

Witnessing the executions traumatizes Pierre. He falls into a stupor. But that evening happening to meet a kindly peasant named Platón Karatáev in the barracks restores Pierre to mental equilibrium.

Summary:

After the executions, Pierre is pardoned and sent to the barracks for the prisoners of war. But witnessing these murders left Pierre in a highly traumatized state, in fact almost in a stupor. From the moment Pierre had witnessed those terrible murders committed by men who did not wish to commit them, it was as if the mainspring of his life, on which everything depended and which made everything appear alive, had suddenly been wrenched out and everything in Pierre's psyche had collapsed into a heap of meaningless rubbish. Though he did not acknowledge it to himself, Pierre's faith in the right ordering of the universe, in humanity, in his own soul, and in God, had been destroyed. Although he could still see and hear his surroundings, Pierre's mind had sunken into a dense fog. That evening, though, in the barracks Pierre meets a remarkable kindly humble peasant named Platón Karatáev. Platón speaks with Pierre about life and his family, telling Pierre that "I say things happen not as we plan but as God judges. Platón shares his simple food with Pierre, some baked potatoes which Pierre finds delicious. This brief contact with this humble but saintly peasant lifts Pierre out of his trauma and restores Pierre's mental equilibrium. That evening, Pierre did not sleep, but lay with eyes open in the darkness, listening to the regular snoring of Platón who lay beside him. Pierre now felt that the world that had been shattered was once more stirring in his soul with a new beauty and on new and unshakable foundations.

Quote from the chapter:

From the moment Pierre had witnessed those terrible murders committed by men who did not wish to commit them, it was as if the mainspring of his life, on which everything depended and which made everything appear alive, had suddenly been wrenched out and everything had collapsed into a heap of meaningless rubbish. Though he did not acknowledge it to himself, his faith in the right ordering of the universe, in humanity, in his own soul, and in God, had been destroyed. He had experienced this before, but never so strongly as now. When similar doubts had assailed him before, they had been the result of his own wrongdoing, and at the bottom of his heart he had felt that relief from his despair and from those doubts was to be found within himself. But now he felt that the universe had crumbled before his eyes and only meaningless ruins remained, and this not by any fault of his own. He felt that it was not in his power to regain faith in the meaning of life.

Book 12, Chapter 13

A description of Pierre's fellow prisoner Platón Karatáev, a peasant soldier who to Pierre seemed the very personification of everything Russian and kindly, the spirit of simplicity and truth itself.

Summary:

This chapter contains a description of Pierre's fellow prisoner Platón Karatáev. Twenty-three soldiers, three officers, and two officials were confined in the shed in which Pierre had been placed and where he remained for four weeks. Afterwards, Karatáev was the only fellow prisoner Pierre remembered clearly. In Pierre's mind, Karatáev always remained a most vivid and precious memory and the personification of everything Russian, kindly, and round. He had physical strength and agility and seemed not to know what fatigue and sickness meant. Karatáev must have been about 50, although he looked much younger. He had an expression of innocence and youth, his voice pleasant and musical, his speech apt and direct. He baked, cooked, sewed, planed, and mended boots. He was always busy, and only at night allowed himself conversation. Karatáev slept like a stone at night. He had peasant habits. By being in the military, Karatáev relieved his siblings of this obligation, which they appreciated. He did not complain, and had never been flogged. To all the other prisoners Platón Karatáev seemed a most ordinary soldier. They called him “little falcon” or “Platósha,” chaffed him good-naturedly, and sent him on errands. But to Pierre he always remained what he had seemed that first night: an unfathomable, rounded, eternal personification of the spirit of simplicity and truth.

Quote from the chapter:

He liked to talk and he talked well, adorning his speech with terms of endearment and with folk sayings which Pierre thought he invented himself, but the chief charm of his talk lay in the fact that the commonest events—sometimes just such as Pierre had witnessed without taking notice of them—assumed in Karatáev’s a character of solemn fitness. He liked to hear the folk tales one of the soldiers used to tell of an evening (they were always the same), but most of all he liked to hear stories of real life. He would smile joyfully when listening to such stories, now and then putting in a word or asking a question to make the moral beauty of what he was told clear to himself. Karatáev had no attachments, friendships, or love, as Pierre understood them, but loved and lived affectionately with everything life brought him in contact with, particularly with man—not any particular man, but those with whom he happened to be. He loved his dog, his comrades, the French, and Pierre who was his neighbor, but Pierre felt that in spite of Karatáev’s affectionate tenderness for him (by which he unconsciously gave Pierre’s spiritual life its due) he would not have grieved for a moment at parting from him. And Pierre began to feel in the same way toward Karatáev.

Book 12, Chapter 14

Princess Mary travels with her nephew and some staff to see Prince Andrew. When she arrives at the house where the Rostóvs are staying, Natásha tells Mary that Andrew's condition has been declining by the day.

Summary:

When Princess Mary heard from Nicholas that her brother was with the Rostóv's at Yaroslávl she at once prepared to go there, in spite of her aunt's efforts to dissuade her—and not merely to go herself but to take her nephew with her. She left at once, along with a number of her servants and staff. Due to the war, she had to take a roundabout route. During this everyone was astonished at Mary's energy and firmness of spirit. No difficulties daunted her. The last days of her stay in Vorónezh had been the happiest of her life. Her love for Nicholas Rostóv no longer tormented or agitated her. It filled her whole soul, had become an integral part of herself, and she no longer struggled against it. But, when after two weeks she arrived at the house where the Rostóv's were staying, Mary knew not if she would find Prince Andrew alive or dead. Mary received a warm and kind greeting from Countess Rostóv. And, hardly had the princess looked at Natásha's face before she realized that here was a real comrade in her grief, and consequently a friend. She ran to meet her, embraced her, and began to cry on her shoulder. There was only one expression on Natásha's agitated face—that of love—boundless love for him, for her, and for all that was near to the man she loved. Natásha tells Mary that Prince Andrew's condition is in decline. Mary and Natásha, who have both been crying, sit for a few minutes to compose themselves and then go in to see Prince Andrew.

Quote from the chapter:

They sat a little while downstairs near his room till they had left off crying and were able to go to him with calm faces. "How has his whole illness gone? Is it long since he grew worse? When did this happen?" Princess Mary inquired. Natásha told her that at first there had been danger from his feverish condition and the pain he suffered, but at Tróitsa that had passed and the doctor had only been afraid of gangrene. That danger had also passed. When they reached Yaroslávl the wound had begun to fester (Natásha knew all about such things as festering) and the doctor had said that the festering might take a normal course. Then fever set in, but the doctor had said the fever was not very serious. "But two days ago this suddenly happened," said Natásha, struggling with her sobs. "I don't know why, but you will see what he is like." "Is he weaker? Thinner?" asked the princess. "No, it's not that, but worse. You will see. O, Mary, he is too good, he cannot, cannot live, because..."

Book 12, Chapter 15

Entering Andrew's room with Natásha, Mary realizes her brother is dying. The three try to talk, but conversation is difficult for them. When Andrew's son comes into the room, he intuitively understands everything.

Summary:

When Mary and Natásha enter Andrew's room, Mary realizes what Natásha had tried to tell her - that Andrew was dying. Andrew speaks kindly to Mary, but his gaze seems to suggest he knows he is not long for this world. In Andrew's gaze could be felt an estrangement from everything belonging to this world, terrible in one who is alive. Evidently only with an effort did he understand anything living; but it was obvious that he failed to understand, not because he lacked the power to do so but because he understood something else—something the living did not and could not understand—and which wholly occupied his mind. This awareness made their conversation cold and disconnected and it continually broke off. Mary, Andrew and Natásha try to talk about many things, about conditions in Moscow, about Mary's journey, about the affection between Mary and Nicholas, about Andrew's son, about how Natásha has cared for Andrew. But

they find conversation impossible. Andrew's new awareness has come between them. Our feelings, he thinks, all those ideas that seem so important to us, are unnecessary. We cannot understand one another," and he remained silent. But, when Prince Andrew's little son of seven enters the room, he could not have had a better or more profound understanding of the meaning of the scene he had witnessed between his father, Mary, and Natásha. He understood the situation completely, and, leaving the room without crying, went silently up to Natásha who had come out with him and looked shyly at her with his beautiful, thoughtful eyes, then his uplifted, rosy upper lip trembled and leaning his head against her he began to cry.

Quote from the chapter:

"Yes, to them it must seem sad!" he thought. "But how simple it is. "The fowls of the air sow not, neither do they reap, yet your Father feedeth them," he said to himself and wished to say to Princess Mary; "but no, they will take it their own way, they won't understand! They can't understand that all those feelings they prize so—all our feelings, all those ideas that seem so important to us, are unnecessary. We cannot understand one another," and he remained silent. Prince Andrew's little son was seven. He could scarcely read, and knew nothing. After that day he lived through many things, gaining knowledge, observation, and experience, but had he possessed all the faculties he afterwards acquired, he could not have had a better or more profound understanding of the meaning of the scene he had witnessed between his father, Mary, and Natásha, than he had then. He understood it completely, and, leaving the room without crying, went silently up to Natásha who had come out with him and looked shyly at her with his beautiful, thoughtful eyes, then his uplifted, rosy upper lip trembled and leaning his head against her he began to cry.

Book 12, Chapter 16

Andrew in a dream sees death overcomes both his love for Natásha and his fears of death. Andrew begins to slip away from this life and, a few days later, he dies peacefully with Natásha and Mary by his side.

Summary:

Andrew's illness pursued its normal physical course, but what Natásha referred to when she said: "This suddenly happened," had occurred two days before Princess Mary arrived. For Andrew, this was the culminating spiritual struggle between life and death, in which death gained the victory. It was the unexpected realization of the fact that he still valued life as presented to him in the form of his love for Natásha, and a last, though ultimately vanquished, attack of terror before the unknown. The turning point seemed to come in a dream he had that evening. Andrew was beginning to doze when suddenly a feeling of happiness seized him, which always happened now whenever Natásha was nearby. He asks her if he will recover. She tells him he will. But then, Andrew dozes off and in a dream he sees death trying to enter his room through a door. In the dream he tries to block the door, but Andrew is unable to prevent death entering the room. After that evening, not only did Prince Andrew know he would die, but he felt that he was dying and was already half dead. Without haste or agitation he prepared for death and awaited what was coming. He awaits what comes next, no longer afraid of death. A few days later, with Mary and Natásha at his side, Andrew slips away.

Quote from the chapter:

During the hours of solitude, suffering, and partial delirium he spent after he was wounded, the more deeply he penetrated into the new principle of eternal love revealed to him, the more he unconsciously detached himself from earthly life. To love everything and everybody and always to sacrifice oneself for love meant not to love anyone, not to live this earthly life. And the more imbued he became with that principle of love, the more he renounced life and the more completely he destroyed that dreadful barrier which—in the absence of such love—stands between life and death. When during those first days he remembered that he would have to die, he said to himself: "Well, what of it? So much the better!" But after the night in Mytíshchi when, half delirious, he had seen her for whom he longed appear before him and, having pressed her hand to his lips, had shed gentle, happy tears, love for a particular woman again crept unobserved into his heart and once more bound him to life. And joyful and agitating thoughts began to occupy his mind.

Book 13, Chapter 1

The so-called flank march from the Ryazána to the Tarútino camp was the result of a multiplicity of circumstances at the time. It was not due to someone's feat of military brilliance, as some now believe.

Summary:

In this chapter Tolstoy returns to his theme of the causes of historical events, this time pointing out that the so-called flank march from the Ryazána to the Tarútino camp was not due to anyone's military genius. Today, historians ascribe the glory of that achievement of genius to different men. But really, it was due to a number of diverse circumstances on the ground at the time. Originally what seemed needed was a direct retreat on Nízhni-Nóvgorod. But most of the Russian provisions lay in a more southerly direction, accessible via the Kalúga road. And, if things had gone differently, such as for example if Napoleon had attacked the Russians more vigorously, it could have proved ruinous to the Russians and salutary for the French. Also, if the Russian army retreated on Nízhni the army would be separated from its supplies by the broad river Oká, which cannot be crossed early in winter. Then, too, concern for the safety of the arsenal at Túla caused the army to turn further south. So, it is impossible to say precisely when, or by whom, it was decided to make this so-called flank movement, which is now remembered as a brilliant decision attributed to some individual or another. It was simply the logical thing to do at the time.

Quote from the chapter:

The army turned more to the south, along the Ryazán road and nearer to its supplies. Subsequently the inactivity of the French (who even lost sight of the Russian army), concern for the safety of the arsenal at Túla, and especially the advantages of drawing nearer to its supplies caused the army to turn still further south to the Túla road. Having crossed over, by a forced march, to the Túla road beyond the Pakhrá, the Russian commanders intended to remain at Podólsk and had no thought of the Tarútino position; but innumerable circumstances and the reappearance of French troops who had for a time lost touch with the Russians, and projects of giving battle, and above all the abundance of provisions in Kalúga province, obliged our army to turn still more to the south and to cross from the Túla to the Kalúga road and go to Tarútino, which was between the roads along which those supplies lay. Just as it is impossible to say when it was decided to abandon Moscow, so it is impossible to say precisely when, or by whom, it was decided to move to Tarútino. Only when the army had got there, as the result of innumerable and

varying forces, did people begin to assure themselves that they had desired this movement and long ago foreseen its result.

Book 13, Chapter 2

Multiple factors were making a Russian advance on the French inevitable, even though Kutúzov would have preferred to delay the attack.

Summary:

During the month that the French troops were pillaging in Moscow and the Russian troops were quietly encamped at Tarútino, a change had taken place in the relative strength of the two armies—both in spirit and in number—as a result of which the superiority had passed to the Russian side. As soon as that change occurred the need of attacking at once showed itself by countless signs. These signs were: Lauriston's mission; the abundance of provisions at Tarútino; the reports coming in from all sides of the inactivity and disorder of the French; the flow of recruits to our regiments; the fine weather; the long rest the Russian soldiers had enjoyed, and the impatience to do what they had been assembled for, the easy successes gained by guerrilla troops over the French, the envy aroused by this; the desire for revenge that lay in the heart of every Russian as long as the French were in Moscow, and other signs. There was a substantial change in the relative strength, and an advance had become inevitable. Kutúzov's merit now lay, not in any strategic maneuver of genius, but that he — who as commander in chief might have been expected to be eager to attack—employed his whole strength to restrain the Russian army from useless engagements.

Quote from the chapter:

The famous flank movement merely consisted in this: after the advance of the French had ceased, the Russian army, which had been continually retreating straight back from the invaders, deviated from that direct course and, not finding itself pursued, was naturally drawn toward the district where supplies were abundant. If instead of imagining to ourselves commanders of genius leading the Russian army, we picture that army without any leaders, it could not have done anything but make a return movement toward Moscow, describing an arc in the direction where most provisions were to be found and where the country was richest. That movement from the Nízhni to the Ryazán, Túla, and Kalúga roads was so natural that even the Russian marauders moved in that direction, and demands were sent from Petersburg for Kutúzov to take his army that way. At Tarútino Kutúzov received what was almost a reprimand from the Emperor for having moved his army along the Ryazán road, and the Emperor's letter indicated to him the very position he had already occupied near Kalúga.

Book 13, Chapter 3

Many people were vying to steer army operations, each one believing he had more influence then he actually had. The Emperor orders Kutúzov to go on the offensive. By then, the battle of Tarútino has already taken place.

Summary:

The Russian army was commanded by Kutúzov and his staff, and also by the Emperor from Petersburg. The whole staff of the Russian army was reorganized. Many men were trying to influence the conduct of the war, each imagining himself to be in charge. As a result of the hostility between Kutúzov and Bennigsen, the presence of confidential representatives of the Emperor, and other factors, more than usually complicated infighting of parties was going on among the staff of the army. With Moscow now in French hands, and worried that Petersburg might be next, the Emperor sent a long and rather harsh letter to Kutúzov, asking Kutúzov how it could be possible that he still had not gone on the offensive against the French. Even in Petersburg people were thinking it high time to attack the French, contrary to the view of Kutúzov that waiting was better. As the situation was unfolding on the ground, things had reached a point where Kutúzov could no longer oppose the momentum of events, even though he may have wished to do so. So, Kutúzov ordered an attack on the French at Tarútino, even before receiving the letter from the Emperor urging him to go on the offensive.

Quote from the chapter:

You will be responsible if the enemy is able to direct a force of any size against Petersburg to threaten this capital in which it has not been possible to retain many troops; for with the army entrusted to you, and acting with resolution and energy, you have ample means to avert this fresh calamity. Remember that you have still to answer to our offended country for the loss of Moscow. You have experienced my readiness to reward you. That readiness will not weaken in me, but I and Russia have a right to expect from you all the zeal, firmness, and success which your intellect, military talent, and the courage of the troops you command justify us in expecting. But by the time this letter, which proved that the real relation of the forces had already made itself felt in Petersburg, was dispatched, Kutúzov had found himself unable any longer to restrain the army he commanded from attacking and a battle had taken place.

Book 13, Chapter 4

Dispositions for a battle at Tarútino were prepared and signed by Kutúzov. However, Ermólov needlessly delayed signing the dispositions, only because he wanted to get Konovnítsyn into trouble.

Summary:

There were many signs that the time was right to attack Murat at Tarútino. For example, a Cossack out hunting rabbits had happened upon Murat's camp and noted that it was very weekly defended. Based on signs and suggestions like this, Kutúzov decided to attack the French at Tarútino. Written dispositions for the battle were drawn up. The dispositions were very good, (at least on paper). Kutúzov signed them and they went to Ermólov for his signature. However, Ermólov delayed signing the battle dispositions. He left and could not be found that day. In the evening, Ermólov was located at a party amid dancing and singing. Observing all this, a bystander remarked “You think he went off just by chance? It was a trick. It was done on purpose to get Konovnítsyn into trouble. You’ll see what a mess there’ll be tomorrow.”

Quote from the chapter:

When the necessary number of copies of the dispositions had been prepared, an officer was summoned and sent to deliver them to Ermólov to deal with. A young officer of the Horse Guards, Kutúzov’s orderly, pleased at the importance of the mission entrusted to him, went to Ermólov’s quarters. “Gone away,” said Ermólov’s orderly. The officer of the Horse Guards went to a

general with whom Ermólov was often to be found. "No, and the general's out too." The officer, mounting his horse, rode off to someone else. "No, he's gone out." "If only they don't make me responsible for this delay!

Book 13, Chapter 5

On the morning of the planned battle, the troops were not in place and ready to attack. Kutúzov totally loses it! He completely chews out two officers who just happened to be nearby. The attack has to be postponed until the next day.

Summary:

Next day the decrepit Kutúzov, having given orders to be called early, said his prayers, dressed, and, with an unpleasant consciousness of having to direct a battle he did not approve of, drove to the place where the attacking columns were to meet. However, when he arrives he finds that the Russian troops are not yet in place for the attack. It seemed many people had not received the order to advance. Kutúzov is livid. He blows up on several people who happen to be nearby, chewing them out thoroughly. Kutúzov's anger, once expended, did not return. he again got into his calèche and drove home in silence. Later, Bennigsen, Konovnítsyn, and Toll insist to Kutúzov that the movement that had miscarried that morning had to be executed next day. And once more Kutúzov had to consent to the attack on Murat.

Quote from the chapter:

The officer reported that no order to advance had been received. "How! Not rec..." Kutúzov began, but checked himself immediately and sent for a senior officer. Getting out of his calèche, he waited with drooping head and breathing heavily, pacing silently up and down. When Eýkhen, the officer of the general staff whom he had summoned, appeared, Kutúzov went purple in the face, not because that officer was to blame for the mistake, but because he was an object of sufficient importance for him to vent his wrath on. Trembling and panting the old man fell into that state of fury in which he sometimes used to roll on the ground, and he fell upon Eýkhen, threatening him with his hands, shouting and loading him with gross abuse. Another man, Captain Brózin, who happened to turn up and who was not at all to blame, suffered the same fate. "What sort of another blackguard are you? I'll have you shot! Scoundrels!" yelled Kutúzov in a hoarse voice, waving his arms and reeling.

Book 13, Chapter 6

The attack on Murat's camp at Tarútino is poorly managed and results in only partial success. Many prisoners and booty are taken, but Murat is not captured and there are unnecessary Russian casualties.

Summary:

On the following evening the troops assembled and advanced during the night, taking great care not to be seen or heard. As always happens, most of them got lost and failed to arrive at the proper locations assigned to them in the dispositions. At dawn, someone claiming to be a disgruntled Polish sergeant promised to help them capture Murat if they lend would him 100 soldiers. Count

Orlóv-Denísov lent him the 100 soldiers, but soon decided it was probably a trick, so called back the 100 soldiers. No one except Count Orlóv-Denísov arrived in time for the planned Russian attack. Rather than wait any longer, Orlóv-Denísov attacked Murat's camp. The surprised French troops ran away. Rather than give chase, Orlóv-Denísov's began collecting booty and prisoners. This gave the French time to reform and offer resistance to the Russians, which resulted in some Russian casualties.

Quote from the chapter:

One desperate, frightened yell from the first French soldier who saw the Cossacks, and all who were in the camp, undressed and only just waking up, ran off in all directions, abandoning cannons, muskets, and horses. Had the Cossacks pursued the French, without heeding what was behind and around them, they would have captured Murat and everything there. That was what the officers desired. But it was impossible to make the Cossacks budge when once they had got booty and prisoners. None of them listened to orders. Fifteen hundred prisoners and thirty-eight guns were taken on the spot, besides standards and (what seemed most important to the Cossacks) horses, saddles, horsecloths, and the like. All this had to be dealt with, the prisoners and guns secured, the booty divided—not without some shouting and even a little fighting among themselves—and it was on this that the Cossacks all busied themselves. The French, not being farther pursued, began to recover themselves: they formed into detachments and began firing. Orlóv-Denísov, still waiting for the other columns to arrive, advanced no further.

Book 13, Chapter 7

The battle of Tarútino was very different than planned, but the end results were good, since this battle shifted the Russian army from retreating to attacking, and it shocked Napoleon's army into beginning its flight out of Russia.

Summary:

Kutúzov accompanied another column that was to attack the French. But Kutúzov did not like the plan, so he intentionally held the troops back and did not advance, despite urgings from Ermólov's and others that he attack. Kutúzov only ordered an advance after Murat's troops had already started to retreat, and even then Kutúzov advanced very, very slowly. So the whole battle consisted in what Orlóv-Denísov's Cossacks had done: the rest of the army merely lost some hundreds of men uselessly, although afterwards Kutúzov and many others received generous rewards and recognitions. And, as always seems to be the case with carefully planned battles, what actually happened at the battle of Tarútino was nothing like what the plan said was supposed to happen. Nonetheless, the results were just what Russia needed at that point in the war. With a minimum of effort and insignificant losses, the Russian army transitioned from retreat to advance, the weakness of the French was exposed, and this battle shocked Napoleon's army to begin its flight away from Moscow.

Quote from the chapter:

But if the aim of the battle was what actually resulted and what all the Russians of that day desired—to drive the French out of Russia and destroy their army—it is quite clear that the battle of Tarútino, just because of its incongruities, was exactly what was wanted at that stage of the campaign. It would be difficult and even impossible to imagine any result more opportune than the actual outcome of this battle. With a minimum of effort and insignificant losses, despite the greatest confusion, the most important results of the whole campaign were attained: the transition

from retreat to advance, an exposure of the weakness of the French, and the administration of that shock which Napoleon's army had only awaited to begin its flight.

Book 13, Chapter 8

It may seem that Napoleon had lots of great options for continued success. But he was just one person being swept along by life, like everyone else, and no one's personal activity can ever be enough to direct the flow of history.

Summary:

After entering Moscow, Napoleon's position seemed really excellent. He had control of the city, and the Russian army had retreated and did not attack him for an entire month. Seemingly, at that point Napoleon had lots of great options open to him. He could have pursued the Russian army and destroyed it with his much stronger French army. Or, he could have stopped the looting, and instead supplied his army from the wealthy city with enough provisions and warm clothing to make it through the Winter. He could have moved on to Petersburg to put pressure on the Russian government. Or, he could have staged an orderly retreat to move his army back to Paris. But Napoleon did none of these things, and instead seems to have behaved in the most foolish way possible, doing everything wrong. Did Napoleon suddenly cease to be a genius after entering Moscow? No, the reality is just that, try as he might, Napoleon was only one person. His personal activity was not sufficient to control the flow of history.

Quote from the chapter:

Had Napoleon's aim been to destroy his army, the most skillful strategist could hardly have devised any series of actions that would so completely have accomplished that purpose, independently of anything the Russian army might do. Napoleon, the man of genius, did this! But to say that he destroyed his army because he wished to, or because he was very stupid, would be as unjust as to say that he had brought his troops to Moscow because he wished to and because he was very clever and a genius. In both cases his personal activity, having no more force than the personal activity of any soldier, merely coincided with the laws that guided the event. The historians quite falsely represent Napoleon's faculties as having weakened in Moscow, and do so only because the results did not justify his actions.

Book 13, Chapter 9

After capturing Moscow, Napoleon took many steps to restore and maintain public order as well as to continue to advance his military goals in Russia.

Summary:

After capturing Moscow, Napoleon took additional military actions to fortify the city, to continue to pursue Kutúzov, and planned for a future campaign against Russia. He also reached out diplomatically to Petersburg and sent a negotiator to Emperor Alexander. In addition, Napoleon took many steps aimed at restoring the normal functioning of the city. For example, he gave orders to find and execute the incendiaries, punished Rostopchín's mismanagement, set up a municipal government, reestablished the police force to suppress crime, and reopened churches. He called on

everyone to come home and to go back to work, promised to pay them, and to return to normal life, as long as they obeyed the military and civil authorities. To support the army, he authorized them to confiscate needed provisions. He opened public markets where peasants could sell their produce at fair prices and with police protection. He also opened a theatre and supported public charities. He provided for public relief. In short, Napoleon did his best to bring back normal life to Moscow, although sometimes he used forged currency to do so.

Quote from the chapter:

Your fellow citizens are returning every day to their homes and orders have been given that they should find in them the help and protection due to their misfortunes. These are the measures the government has adopted to re-establish order and relieve your condition. But to achieve this aim it is necessary that you should add your efforts and should, if possible, forget the misfortunes you have suffered, should entertain the hope of a less cruel fate, should be certain that inevitable and ignominious death awaits those who make any attempt on your persons or on what remains of your property, and finally that you should not doubt that these will be safeguarded, since such is the will of the greatest and most just of monarchs. Soldiers and citizens, of whatever nation you may be, re-establish public confidence, the source of the welfare of a state, live like brothers, render mutual aid and protection one to another, unite to defeat the intentions of the evil-minded, obey the military and civil authorities, and your tears will soon cease to flow!

Book 13, Chapter 10

Nothing Napoleon tried to restore and maintain public order in Moscow as well as to continue to advance his military goals in Russia seemed to work. Finally, after the fall of Tarútino, Napoleon ordered the departure of the French army.

Summary:

Strange to say, all these measures, efforts, and plans undertaken by Napoleon to restore order—which were not at all worse than others issued in similar circumstances elsewhere—proved ineffective. Nothing seemed to work. For example, Napoleon was unable to stop the French soldiers from looting. The city continued to burn. The French generals lost touch with the Russian army of sixty thousand men who they were pursuing. Regarding diplomacy, Alexander did not receive Napoleons envoys and did not reply to their embassage. Many citizens refused to return to their jobs. Robberies continued. In short, none of the many things Napoleon did to try to restore order after the fall of Moscow seemed to work. Finally, the news of the battle of Tarútino, unexpectedly received by Napoleon at a review, evoked in him a desire to punish the Russians, and he issued the order for departure which the whole army was demanding.

Quote from the chapter:

"Robbery and pillaging continue. There is a band of thieves in our district who ought to be arrested by a strong force—October 11." "The Emperor is extremely displeased that despite the strict orders to stop pillage, parties of marauding Guards are continually seen returning to the Krémlin. Among the Old Guard disorder and pillage were renewed more violently than ever yesterday evening, last night, and today. The Emperor sees with regret that the picked soldiers appointed to guard his person, who should set an example of discipline, carry disobedience to such a point that they break into the cellars and stores containing army supplies. Others have disgraced themselves to the extent of disobeying sentinels and officers, and have abused and beaten them." "The Grand Marshal of the palace," wrote the governor, "complains bitterly that

in spite of repeated orders, the soldiers continue to commit nuisances in all the courtyards and even under the very windows of the Emperor."

Book 13, Chapter 11

After four weeks Pierre has adjusted well to life in the prison camp. The experience has been invigorating. He gets along well with the other prisoners and with the guards. They plan to leave Moscow soon.

Summary:

After four weeks in the prison camp, Pierre's clothes are dirty and torn. Physically he had changed much during this time. He no longer seemed stout. The former slackness which had shown itself even in his eyes was now replaced by an energetic readiness for action and resistance. The look of his eyes is resolute, calm, and animatedly alert, as never before. His feet were bare. Pierre has learned a lot during these weeks and this recollection is pleasant to him. He gets along well with the other prisoners and the guards, and has long conversations with the captain in charge of the camp, who admires Pierre. Pierre acts as translator when needed. Pierre still shares a hut with Platón, who has just made a shirt for one of the guards. A playful dog lives with them in the camp. Nearly all the troops are leaving Moscow and an order about the prisoners is expected that day.. Pierre makes sure that another prisoner who is ill will be cared for when the rest of them leave.

Quote from the chapter:

What sunshine, Monsieur Kiril!" (Their name for Pierre.) "Eh? Just like spring!" And the corporal leaned against the door and offered Pierre his pipe, though whenever he offered it Pierre always declined it. "To be on the march in such weather..." he began. Pierre inquired what was being said about leaving, and the corporal told him that nearly all the troops were starting and there ought to be an order about the prisoners that day. Sokolóv, one of the soldiers in the shed with Pierre, was dying, and Pierre told the corporal that something should be done about him. The corporal replied that Pierre need not worry about that as they had an ambulance and a permanent hospital and arrangements would be made for the sick, and that in general everything that could happen had been foreseen by the authorities. "Besides, Monsieur Kiril, you have only to say a word to the captain, you know. He is a man who never forgets anything. Speak to the captain when he makes his round, he will do anything for you."

Book 13, Chapter 12

The four weeks he spent in the prison camp greatly improved Pierre's outlook on life.

Summary:

During the weeks in the prison camp, Pierre was able to achieve a new inner peace and harmony, a state of inner tranquility and ease of mind he had formerly striven in vain to reach. Before, he had been looking for joy in the wrong places, such as in philanthropy, in Freemasonry, in the dissipations of town life, and so on - but all of these past quests had failed him. But in the prison camp he learned to endure privation joyfully. Those dreadful moments at the executions had forever washed away the agitating thoughts that had formerly seemed so important. Pierre ceased

to worry about things outside of his control, like Russia, or the war, or politics, or Napoleon. It was plain to him that all these things were no business of his, and that he was not called on to judge concerning them and therefore could not do so. His anger with his wife and anxiety that his name should not be smirched now seemed not merely trivial but even amusing. His intention of killing Napoleon now seemed to him meaningless and even ridiculous. Being a useful member of the prison community also helped improve his outlook, as was the influence of his friend Platón Karatáev. His wealth, with all its attendant options, had also been a source of anxiety in the past. Subsequently, and for the rest of his life, he thought and spoke with enthusiasm of that month of captivity in the prison, of those irrecoverable, strong, joyful sensations, and chiefly of the complete peace of mind and inner freedom which he experienced only during those weeks.

Quote from the chapter:

Here and now for the first time he fully appreciated the enjoyment of eating when he wanted to eat, drinking when he wanted to drink, sleeping when he wanted to sleep, of warmth when he was cold, of talking to a fellow man when he wished to talk and to hear a human voice. The satisfaction of one's needs—good food, cleanliness, and freedom—now that he was deprived of all this, seemed to Pierre to constitute perfect happiness; and the choice of occupation, that is, of his way of life—now that that was so restricted—seemed to him such an easy matter that he forgot that a superfluity of the comforts of life destroys all joy in satisfying one's needs, while great freedom in the choice of occupation—such freedom as his wealth, his education, and his social position had given him in his own life—is just what makes the choice of occupation insolubly difficult and destroys the desire and possibility of having an occupation.

Book 13, Chapter 13

As the camp is evacuated, the previously friendly prison guards suddenly change and take on the heartless mien of men capable of killing. Once outside the gates, the prisoners are shocked to see the city in ashes.

Summary:

As part of the French evacuation of Moscow, the prisoners are gotten ready and marched out of the prison camp. When this happens, a sudden and strange change comes over the prison guards. Previously the guards have been friendly and humane with the prisoners. However, when the time to move comes, the faces of the guards change and they suddenly become callous and uncaring. It is a look Pierre has seen before, such as when witnessing the executions by firing squad, of men capable of killing without remorse. This is illustrated by the way the guards deal with a man who is dying in Pierre's shed. This sick man is suffering tremendously. He is groaning in pain. Previously, the guards had assured Pierre they would send this fellow to hospital when the time to leave came. Now, however, the guards leave this sick man behind to die, seeming not to care in the least about his suffering and probable death. The formerly caring guards will not so much as listen to Pierre's request for help for this man. The prisoners are marched out of the camp, the guards carelessly leaving the sick man behind to die a painful death. Once the prisoners are outside the camp, everyone marvels at how Moscow has been burned to ruins.

Quote from the chapter:

"Corporal, what will they do with the sick man?..." Pierre began. But even as he spoke he began to doubt whether this was the corporal he knew or a stranger, so unlike himself did the corporal seem at that moment. Moreover, just as Pierre was speaking a sharp rattle of drums was suddenly

heard from both sides. The corporal frowned at Pierre's words and, uttering some meaningless oaths, slammed the door. The shed became semidark, and the sharp rattle of the drums on two sides drowned the sick man's groans. "There it is!... It again!..." said Pierre to himself, and an involuntary shudder ran down his spine. In the corporal's changed face, in the sound of his voice, in the stirring and deafening noise of the drums, he recognized that mysterious, callous force which compelled people against their will to kill their fellow men—that force the effect of which he had witnessed during the executions. To fear or to try to escape that force, to address entreaties or exhortations to those who served as its tools, was useless.

Book 13, Chapter 14

Moscow's streets are crammed on the day of the French evacuation. They see the French overloaded with plunder. In the evening, looking at the stars, Pierre has an epiphany and realizes that no human being can ever truly be captured.

Summary:

In this chapter, Tolstoy describes the bedlam on the streets of Moscow on the eve of the French evacuation. The prisoners can barely move, so full are the streets with vehicles, wagons and artillery. Everyone and everything is loaded down with plunder. The French seem to want to carry off anything of value from Moscow, endless rows of troops and carts stretched away into the distance. Often, hemmed in, the prisoners have to stop and wait for long periods, halted, and again moved on, and from all sides vehicles and men crowded closer and closer together. Tempers flare and they see fighting on the road. They hear shouts of anger and abuse. The prison guards become crueler than ever. They have been told to shoot any prisoner who tries to escape. That evening, when they have finally stopped for the night, having only moved a short distance within the city, Pierre is told that he may not cross the road to speak to some other prisoners. Pierre is overcome with a sudden epiphany and begins to laugh. Looking at the stars in the sky, he realizes that it is not really possible for any human being to hold another captive, people being so limitless.

Quote from the chapter:

"Ha-ha-ha!" laughed Pierre. And he said aloud to himself: "The soldier did not let me pass. They took me and shut me up. They hold me captive. What, me? Me? My immortal soul? Ha-ha-ha! Ha-ha-ha!..." and he laughed till tears started to his eyes. A man got up and came to see what this queer big fellow was laughing at all by himself. Pierre stopped laughing, got up, went farther away from the inquisitive man, and looked around him. The huge, endless bivouac that had previously resounded with the crackling of campfires and the voices of many men had grown quiet, the red campfires were growing paler and dying down. High up in the light sky hung the full moon. Forests and fields beyond the camp, unseen before, were now visible in the distance. And farther still, beyond those forests and fields, the bright, oscillating, limitless distance lured one to itself. Pierre glanced up at the sky and the twinkling stars in its faraway depths. "And all that is me, all that is within me, and it is all I!" thought Pierre. "And they caught all that and put it into a shed boarded up with planks!" He smiled, and went and lay down to sleep beside his companions.

Book 13, Chapter 15

Kutúzov again rejects an offer of a treaty from Napoleon. General Dokhtúrov unexpectedly finds the French army in Formínsk, and sends to Kutúzov for further instructions.

Summary:

Another letter from Napoleon to Kutúzov proposes a treaty, which Kutúzov rejects. Learning of an isolated French division at Formínsk, General Dokhtúrov is sent to destroy it. But, unexpectedly, the entire French army has moved into Formínsk, and is now in front of Dokhtúrov. Dokhtúrov sends to Kutúzov's headquarters for instructions. Tolstoy notes that Dokhtúrov was a very competent General who always seems to be called upon in the most critical moments. But his contributions seem to have been largely forgotten. In later years, among the many heroes proudly remembered in Russian verse and prose, of Dokhtúrov scarcely a word is said.

Quote from the chapter:

It was Dokhtúrov again whom they sent to Formínsk and from there to Málo-Yaroslávets, the place where the last battle with the French was fought and where the obvious disintegration of the French army began; and we are told of many geniuses and heroes of that period of the campaign, but of Dokhtúrov nothing or very little is said and that dubiously. And this silence about Dokhtúrov is the clearest testimony to his merit. It is natural for a man who does not understand the workings of a machine to imagine that a shaving that has fallen into it by chance and is interfering with its action and tossing about in it is its most important part. The man who does not understand the construction of the machine cannot conceive that the small connecting cogwheel which revolves quietly is one of the most essential parts of the machine, and not the shaving which merely harms and hinders the working.

Book 13, Chapter 16

The news that Napoleon is in Formínsk is quickly carried to Kutúzov.

Summary:

Having changed horses twice and galloped twenty miles in an hour and a half over a sticky, muddy road, Bolkhovítinov, the courier from Dokhtúrov, arrives at Kutúzov's headquarters in the middle of the night. Nearly everyone is asleep. But, realizing the great importance of this information, his staff very quickly decides to awaken Kutúzov and give him the Dokhtúrov's report.

Quote from the chapter:

Coming out of the hut into the damp, dark night Konovnítsyn frowned—partly from an increased pain in his head and partly at the unpleasant thought that occurred to him, of how all that nest of influential men on the staff would be stirred up by this news, especially Bennigsen, who ever since Tarútino had been at daggers drawn with Kutúzov; and how they would make suggestions, quarrel, issue orders, and rescind them. And this premonition was disagreeable to him though he knew it could not be helped. And in fact Toll, to whom he went to communicate the news, immediately began to expound his plans to a general sharing his quarters, until Konovnítsyn, who listened in weary silence, reminded him that they must go to see his Highness.

Book 13, Chapter 17

When Kutúzov learns that Napoleon has abandoned Moscow, he realizes at once that Russia has won the war. Kutúzov thanks God and weeps for joy.

Summary:

Kutúzov had been laying awake in bed, as he often did, thinking about what Napoleon would do next. He knew the French had been wounded at Borodinó, he did not know if the wound was mortal. Kutúzov's greatest fear was that Napoleon would remain in Moscow and adopt a defensive strategy. Or, possibly, Napoleon would move on Petersburg. Kutúzov was under constant pressure from Bennigsen and others to take part in useless aggressive movements. The best thing, Kutúzov knew, would be to wait and see what happened next. But, when the courier from Dokhtúrov arrived with confirmation that Napoleon had abandoned Moscow, Kutúzov knew Napoleon's army would not survive. He turned to the opposite side of the room, to the corner darkened by the icons that hung there. “O Lord, my Creator, Thou has heard our prayer...” said he in a tremulous voice with folded hands. “Russia is saved. I thank Thee, O Lord!” and he wept.

Quote from the chapter:

Lying on his bed during those sleepless nights he did just what he reproached those younger generals for doing. He imagined all sorts of possible contingencies, just like the younger men, but with this difference, that he saw thousands of contingencies instead of two or three and based nothing on them. The longer he thought the more contingencies presented themselves. He imagined all sorts of movements of the Napoleonic army as a whole or in sections—against Petersburg, or against him, or to outflank him. He thought too of the possibility (which he feared most of all) that Napoleon might fight him with his own weapon and remain in Moscow awaiting him. Kutúzov even imagined that Napoleon’s army might turn back through Medýn and Yukhnóv, but the one thing he could not foresee was what happened—the insane, convulsive stampede of Napoleon’s army during its first eleven days after leaving Moscow: a stampede which made possible what Kutúzov had not yet even dared to think of—the complete extermination of the French.

Book 13, Chapter 18

Once Napoleon's army began to flee, Kutúzov focused his efforts solely on avoiding useless attacks, maneuvers, or encounters with the perishing enemy.

Summary:

From the time he received news of the French leaving Moscow until the end of the campaign, all Kutúzov’s activity was directed toward restraining his troops, by authority, by guile, and by entreaty, from useless attacks, maneuvers, or encounters with the perishing enemy. Everywhere Kutúzov retreated, but the enemy without waiting for his retreat fled in the opposite direction. Historians sometimes argue that Napoleon could have moved into the rich Russian southern provinces, where provisions would have been available. But, in Tolstoy's opinion, this would not have worked, since now the chief desire of everyone in the French army was just to get away, especially after a chance incident where Napoleon himself was nearly captured by some Russian cossacks. Tolstoy reminds us also that, consistent with his philosophy of history, that the retreat was not caused by one individual named Napoleon, but rather by larger forces influencing the whole army.

Quote from the chapter:

That army could not recover anywhere. Since the battle of Borodinó and the pillage of Moscow it had borne within itself, as it were, the chemical elements of dissolution. The members of what had once been an army—Napoleon himself and all his soldiers fled—without knowing whither, each concerned only to make his escape as quickly as possible from this position, of the hopelessness of which they were all more or less vaguely conscious. So it came about that at the council at Málo-Yaroslávets, when the generals pretending to confer together expressed various opinions, all mouths were closed by the opinion uttered by the simple-minded soldier Mouton who, speaking last, said what they all felt: that the one thing needful was to get away as quickly as possible; and no one, not even Napoleon, could say anything against that truth which they all recognized. But though they all realized that it was necessary to get away, there still remained a feeling of shame at admitting that they must flee.

Book 13, Chapter 19

The French army begins to break up as it flees for Smolénsk. Kutúzov tries, not always successfully, to prevent Russian commanders from attacking the fleeing French so as to avoid unnecessary loss of life.

Summary:

Uppermost in the mind of the French was to reach Smolénsk. Even on this first leg of their long journey to Paris, however, the army began breaking up. Groups of men were peeling away from the main mass of the French army on the Smolénsk road. Conditions were hard, and in fact they would find only scant provisions waiting for them in Smolénsk. Many French wished to surrender, but could not find an opportunity to do so. Realizing that the French army was melting away on its own, Kutúzov tried his best to prevent the other Russian commanders from attacking. However, in some cases, there were Russian attacks on the French, which resulted only in the pointless loss of lives.

Quote from the chapter:

For the French retreating along the old Smolénsk road, the final goal—their native land—was too remote, and their immediate goal was Smolénsk, toward which all their desires and hopes, enormously intensified in the mass, urged them on. It was not that they knew that much food and fresh troops awaited them in Smolénsk, nor that they were told so (on the contrary their superior officers, and Napoleon himself, knew that provisions were scarce there), but because this alone could give them strength to move on and endure their present privations. So both those who knew and those who did not know deceived themselves, and pushed on to Smolénsk as to a promised land. Coming out onto the highroad the French fled with surprising energy and unheard-of rapidity toward the goal they had fixed on. Besides the common impulse which bound the whole crowd of French into one mass and supplied them with a certain energy, there was another cause binding them together—their great numbers. As with the physical law of gravity, their enormous mass drew the individual human atoms to itself. In their hundreds of thousands they moved like a whole nation.

Book 14, Chapter 1

The last part of the War of 1812 is very instructive because it showed that when two nations go to war, the nation with the most successful army on the battlefield isn't always the side coming out ahead.

Summary:

Historians agree that successful warfare results in increased political strength for the side with the winning army and a corresponding decrease in political strength for the side whose army loses. The losing side is typically subjugated to the winning side. The last part of the War of 1812 was different. The truth is that the French Army really did better than the Russians at Borodinó. Yet, France lost strength. How could this have been? Tolstoy says that it was because after the battle of Borodinó the Russians gave up on conventional warfare with traditional rules and fought an all-out guerrilla war, now solely aimed at weakening the French in any way possible. Humble Russian peasants, for example, preferred to burn their hay rather than to let the French buy it at any price.

Quote from the chapter:

After the burning of Smolénsk a war began which did not follow any previous traditions of war. The burning of towns and villages, the retreats after battles, the blow dealt at Borodinó and the renewed retreat, the burning of Moscow, the capture of marauders, the seizure of transports, and the guerrilla war were all departures from the rules. Napoleon felt this, and from the time he took up the correct fencing attitude in Moscow and instead of his opponent's rapier saw a cudgel raised above his head, he did not cease to complain to Kutúzov and to the Emperor Alexander that the war was being carried on contrary to all the rules—as if there were any rules for killing people. In spite of the complaints of the French as to the nonobservance of the rules, in spite of the fact that to some highly placed Russians it seemed rather disgraceful to fight with a cudgel and they wanted to assume a pose en quarte or en tierce according to all the rules, and to make an adroit thrust en prime, and so on—the cudgel of the people's war was lifted with all its menacing and majestic strength, and without consulting anyone's tastes or rules and regardless of anything else, it rose and fell with stupid simplicity, but consistently, and belabored the French till the whole invasion had perished.

Book 14, Chapter 2

Tolstoy explains important differences between guerrilla warfare and the so-called laws of war which apply in conventional military fighting. In guerrilla warfare, the spirit of the warrior matters, more than numbers.

Summary:

Guerrilla warfare appears in wars of national character, such as done by the guerrillas in Spain, by the mountain tribes in the Caucasus, and by the Russians in 1812. Guerrilla warfare is always successful. The biggest difference in guerrilla warfare is that the spirit of the men matters for than their numbers. Instead of two crowds opposing each other, the men disperse, attack singly, run away when attacked by stronger forces, but again attack when opportunity offers. Such a war does not fit in under any rule and is directly opposed to a well-known rule of tactics that an attacker should concentrate his forces in order to be stronger than his opponent at the moment of conflict. Usually, when a smaller force defeats a larger one in conventional battle, the credit is given to the heroes who commanded the smaller but victorious force. But, Tolstoy says, it is only necessary to

abandon the false view (adopted to gratify the "heroes") of the efficacy of the directions issued in wartime by commanders, in order to understand the value of the spirit of the army, which shows up as a greater or lesser readiness to fight and face danger felt by all the men composing an army, quite independently of whether they are, or are not, fighting under the command of a genius, in two—or three-line formation, with clubs or with advanced rifles.

Quote from the chapter:

The tactical rule that an army should act in masses when attacking, and in smaller groups in retreat, unconsciously confirms the truth that the strength of an army depends on its spirit. To lead men forward under fire more discipline (obtainable only by movement in masses) is needed than is needed to resist attacks. But this rule which leaves out of account the spirit of the army continually proves incorrect and is in particularly striking contrast to the facts when some strong rise or fall in the spirit of the troops occurs, as in all national wars. The French, retreating in 1812—though according to tactics they should have separated into detachments to defend themselves—congregated into a mass because the spirit of the army had so fallen that only the mass held the army together. The Russians, on the contrary, ought according to tactics to have attacked in mass, but in fact they split up into small units, because their spirit had so risen that separate individuals, without orders, dealt blows at the French without needing any compulsion to induce them to expose themselves to hardships and dangers.

Book 14, Chapter 3

Partisan warfare flames up fiercely as hundreds of irregular Russian units fell upon much larger units of the fleeing French army. Denísov and Dólokhov plan to jointly attack a French baggage convoy of fifteen hundred men.

Summary:

Before partisan warfare had been officially recognized by the government, thousands of enemy stragglers, marauders, and foragers had been destroyed by the Cossacks and the peasants, who killed them off as instinctively as dogs worry a stray mad dog to death. By October, when the French were fleeing toward Smolénsk, there were hundreds of such companies, of various sizes and characters. Some that adopted all the army methods and had infantry, artillery, staffs, and the comforts of life. Others consisted solely of Cossack cavalry. There were also small scratch groups of foot and horse, and groups of peasants and landowners that remained unknown. The irregulars destroyed the great army piecemeal. Denísov and Dólokhov led partisan units of about 200 men each. The had been stealthily following a French baggage convoy of about 1,500 men which they were planning to seize in a surprise attack.

Quote from the chapter:

The partisan warfare flamed up most fiercely in the latter days of October. Its first period had passed: when the partisans themselves, amazed at their own boldness, feared every minute to be surrounded and captured by the French, and hid in the forests without unsaddling, hardly daring to dismount and always expecting to be pursued. By the end of October this kind of warfare had taken definite shape: it had become clear to all what could be ventured against the French and what could not. Now only the commanders of detachments with staffs, and moving according to rules at a distance from the French, still regarded many things as impossible. The small bands that had started their activities long before and had already observed the French closely considered things possible which the commanders of the big detachments did not dare to

contemplate. The Cossacks and peasants who crept in among the French now considered everything possible.

Book 14, Chapter 4

Denísov waits to hear from Dólokhov concerning their plan to attack the French convoy the next day. A young officer, who turns out to be Pétya Rostóv, rides up with a letter for Denísov.

Summary:

Denísov and some of his hussars are riding through a heavy rain. They are cold, wet and hungry. Denísov is also frustrated because he has not yet heard from Dólokhov concerning their plan to attack and seize the large French baggage convoy the next day. A young Russian officer, who Denísov does not recognize at first, rides up with a letter. This turns out to be Pétya Rostóv, and he and Denísov exchange friendly greetings. The letter is from the German general who has been hoping that Denísov will fight under him, but Denísov wishes to remain independent. Denísov hopes to meet with Dólokhov that evening. He is anxious that he and Dólokhov finalize their plans and capture the French convoy before the German general can beat them to it and capture the convoy himself.

Quote from the chapter:

The officer, a very young lad with a broad rosy face and keen merry eyes, galloped up to Denísov and handed him a sodden envelope. "From the general," said the officer. "Please excuse its not being quite dry." Denísov, frowning, took the envelope and opened it. "There, they kept telling us: 'It's dangerous, it's dangerous,'" said the officer, addressing the esaul while Denísov was reading the dispatch. "But Komaróv and I"—he pointed to the Cossack—"were prepared. We have each of us two pistols.... But what's this?" he asked, noticing the French drummer boy. "A prisoner? You've already been in action? May I speak to him?" "Wostóv! Pétya!" exclaimed Denísov, having run through the dispatch. "Why didn't you say who you were?" and turning with a smile he held out his hand to the lad. The officer was Pétya Rostóv.

Book 14, Chapter 5

Denísov, Pétya and a few of the partisan fighters surveil the small village where the French baggage convoy is spending the night. The see a man named Tíkhon who Denísov sent to kidnap an informant being chased by the French.

Summary:

The rain has stopped. A guide leads Denísov with Pétya and others to a point where they can look down on a small village where is camped the French convoy they plan to attack the next day. Denísov and his men discuss the best way to make the attack. Denísov says he will attack whether or not Dólokhov shows up. Suddenly they see a man named Tíkhon fleeing from the French. Tíkhon is a highly valued member of Denísov's partisan unit. Tíkhon is a peasant who volunteered to join Denísov's partisan forces, and who has proven to be very good at the work. Denísov had sent Tíkhon into the village on a mission to kidnap a French quartermaster for intelligence

purposes. The French are chasing Tíkhon, but he manages to escape the French by jumping in and crossing a stream. The pursuing French do not wish to enter the water, so Tíkhon is able to escape.

Quote from the chapter:

(Tíkhon) was the bravest and most useful man in the party. No one found more opportunities for attacking, no one captured or killed more Frenchmen, and consequently he was made the buffoon of all the Cossacks and hussars and willingly accepted that role. Now he had been sent by Denísov overnight to Shámshevo to capture a "tongue." But whether because he had not been content to take only one Frenchman or because he had slept through the night, he had crept by day into some bushes right among the French and, as Denísov had witnessed from above, had been detected by them.

Book 14, Chapter 6

Tíkhon tells Denísov about his attempt to capture a French soldier for intelligence gathering purposes.

Summary:

After talking more about the attack planned for the next day, Denísov and his companions begin to return to camp. On the way, they run into Tíkhon, who describes with embellishment his attempt to capture a French soldier for intelligence gathering. Timkon says he captured a Frenchman in the morning, but this individual didn't seem to know much. Timkon returned to the village to capture another informant, but was seen and chased away by some Frenchmen. Timkon is teased by the others, but takes it good-naturedly. Pétya is uneasy when he realizes Tíkhon killed his first prisoner, but this feeling soon passes. Denísov seems to have decided to attack the village tomorrow whether or not Dólokhov arrives. However, they learn that Dólokhov is expected soon.

Quote from the chapter:

"I went for another one," Tíkhon continued, "and I crept like this through the wood and lay down." (He suddenly lay down on his stomach with a supple movement to show how he had done it.) "One turned up and I grabbed him, like this." (He jumped up quickly and lightly.) "'Come along to the colonel,' I said. He starts yelling, and suddenly there were four of them. They rushed at me with their little swords. So I went for them with my ax, this way: 'What are you up to?' says I. 'Christ be with you!'" shouted Tíkhon, waving his arms with an angry scowl and throwing out his chest. "Yes, we saw from the hill how you took to your heels through the puddles!" said the esaul, screwing up his glittering eyes. Pétya badly wanted to laugh, but noticed that they all refrained from laughing.

Book 14, Chapter 7

Pétya decides to remain and take part in tomorrow's battle, contrary to his instructions. Pétya offers many small gifts to Denísov and his men, and kindly offers dinner to their captured French drummer boy.

Summary:

Pétya has become an orderly to a general commanding a large Russian guerrilla detachment. Noting that Pétya is too desirous of facing enemy fire and wishing to protect Pétya from his youthful enthusiasm, this general ordered Pétya to deliver the letter to Denísov and return at once. But once in Denísov's camp, Pétya is impressed by the amazing heroism of Denísov and his men. Overjoyed with his new situation, Pétya decides to remain and take part in tomorrow's battle. So satisfied with this situation is he that Pétya seems to become compulsively generous and begins to offer all kinds of small gifts to Denísov and his men. At the risk of appearing too kind-hearted, Pétya also asks permission to make sure a French drummer boy who Denísov's men have captured will receive dinner.

Quote from the chapter:

Pétya Rostóv handed him his clasp knife. The officer admired it. "Please keep it. I have several like it," said Pétya, blushing. "Heavens! I was quite forgetting!" he suddenly cried. "I have some raisins, fine ones; you know, seedless ones. We have a new sutler and he has such capital things. I bought ten pounds. I am used to something sweet. Would you like some?..." and Pétya ran out into the passage to his Cossack and brought back some bags which contained about five pounds of raisins. "Have some, gentlemen, have some!" "You want a coffeepot, don't you?" he asked the esaul. "I bought a capital one from our sutler! He has splendid things. And he's very honest, that's the chief thing. I'll be sure to send it to you. Or perhaps your flints are giving out, or are worn out—that happens sometimes, you know. I have brought some with me, here they are"—and he showed a bag—"a hundred flints. I bought them very cheap. Please take as many as you want, or all if you like...."

Book 14, Chapter 8

Dólokhov plans to slip into the village in disguise in order to assess the French forces. Pétya volunteers to go along, although Denísov attempts to forbid it. Dólokhov implies that Denísov should be executing any French he captures.

Summary:

Dólokhov arrives at Denísov's camp. Pétya is impressed by Dólokhov. He has heard many stories of Dólokhov's extraordinary bravery and of his cruelty to the French. Dólokhov, noticing the French drummer boy, asks Denísov how he handles captured French prisoners. Denísov says he turns them in and gets a receipt. Dólokhov says it would be better for Denísov to kill his prisoners, but Denísov says he doesn't want to have their deaths on his conscious. Dólokhov says he himself would be killed if captured. They are not speaking explicitly, so Pétya doesn't immediately understand what they are saying. Dólokhov wants to go into the village to observe firsthand the strength of their enemy. Pétya volunteers to go with him. Denísov is opposed to them going, and flatly forbids Pétya from doing so. Pétya, however, will not take no for an answer and plans to go with Dólokhov. They will wear French uniforms when they enter the village to hopefully escape detection.

Quote from the chapter:

"But for you and me, old fellow, it's time to drop these amenities," continued Dólokhov, as if he found particular pleasure in speaking of this subject which irritated Denísov. "Now, why have you kept this lad?" he went on, swaying his head. "Because you are sorry for him! Don't we know those 'receipts' of yours? You send a hundred men away, and thirty get there. The rest either starve or get killed. So isn't it all the same not to send them?" The esaul, screwing up his light-

colored eyes, nodded approvingly. "That's not the point. I'm not going to discuss the matter. I do not wish to take it on my conscience. You say they'll die. All wight. Only not by my fault!" Dólokhov began laughing.

Book 14, Chapter 9

Dólokhov, accompanied by Pétya manage to enter the French camp, obtain information, and leave without incident. Pétya is quite frightened the entire time. This experience leaves Pétya even more in awe of Dólokhov's bravery.

Summary:

Dólokhov and Pétya, wearing French uniforms, approach the French sentry. When asked for the password, Dólokhov feigns anger and they are allowed to enter the camp. They find a group of French officers seated around a campfire and join the group, pretending to be stragglers in search of their unit. The French around the campfire appear suspicious, but no one challenges Dólokhov. Dólokhov asks them some questions about the French force, and they leave after a few minutes. Then Dólokhov and Pétya ride slowly through the village, noticing where the French are holding their Russian prisoners. Pétya is quite frightened throughout the entire time, and does not speak at all while in the presence of the French. After they leave the village and are about to separate, Pétya expresses profound admiration for Dólokhov's courage, telling him "you are such a hero! Oh, how fine, how splendid! How I love you!" As they part, Dólokhov tells Pétya to let Denísov know the attack will be in the morning at first light.

Quote from the chapter:

"Well, now he'll come away," Pétya thought every moment as he stood by the campfire listening to the talk. But Dólokhov restarted the conversation which had dropped and began putting direct questions as to how many men there were in the battalion, how many battalions, and how many prisoners. Asking about the Russian prisoners with that detachment, Dólokhov said: "A horrid business dragging these corpses about with one! It would be better to shoot such rabble," and burst into loud laughter, so strange that Pétya thought the French would immediately detect their disguise, and involuntarily took a step back from the campfire. No one replied a word to Dólokhov's laughter, and a French officer whom they could not see (he lay wrapped in a greatcoat) rose and whispered something to a companion. Dólokhov got up and called to the soldier who was holding their horses.

Book 14, Chapter 10

Returning after their successful visit to the French camp, Pétya tells Denísov about the adventure. Pétya doesn't even try to sleep. He is almost in a dream world. When dawn arrives, Denísov orders everyone to prepare for the attack.

Summary:

Returning to his own camp, Pétya finds Denísov waiting for him in the passage. Denísov had been awaiting Pétya's return in a state of agitation, anxiety, and self-reproach for having let him go. "Thank God!" he exclaimed. "Yes, thank God!" he repeated, listening to Pétya's rapturous

account. Denísov had not gone to sleep because he was very worried about Pétya. Denísov tells Pétya to try to get some sleep, but Pétya's spirits are so high that he does not even try to sleep. He wanders about the camp hardly noticing his surroundings. When he encounters a cossack who is awake, Pétya recounts his adventure to him. Pétya asks the cossack to sharpen his saber, and the man does so. Pétya sits down by a wagon almost in a dream state, nearly unaware of his surroundings, and imagines beautiful music in his mind. He looks at the beautiful sky. Pétya briefly dozes off, but is awaken at dawn. Denísov tells him to get ready for their attack on the French, which will soon take place.

Quote from the chapter:

He was in a fairy kingdom where nothing resembled reality. The big dark blotch might really be the watchman's hut or it might be a cavern leading to the very depths of the earth. Perhaps the red spot was a fire, or it might be the eye of an enormous monster. Perhaps he was really sitting on a wagon, but it might very well be that he was not sitting on a wagon but on a terribly high tower from which, if he fell, he would have to fall for a whole day or a whole month, or go on falling and never reach the bottom. Perhaps it was just the Cossack, Likhachëv, who was sitting under the wagon, but it might be the kindest, bravest, most wonderful, most splendid man in the world, whom no one knew of. It might really have been that the hussar came for water and went back into the hollow, but perhaps he had simply vanished—disappeared altogether and dissolved into nothingness. Nothing Pétya could have seen now would have surprised him. He was in a fairy kingdom where everything was possible.

Book 14, Chapter 11

The Russian forces under Denísov and Dólokhov easily overrun the French. Pétya Rostóv, charging recklessly, is shot and dies. Pierre is among the freed Russian prisoners.

Summary:

As planned, Denísov's and Dólokhov's forces launch a surprise attack at dawn on the French convoy camping in the small village at dawn. Many French scatter, but there are pockets of fierce resistance. Before the battle Denísov ordered Pétya to not shove yourself forward anywhere. But in the battle Pétya Rostóv attacks recklessly, charging directly into enemy fire. Pétya is shot in the head and is killed. Soon all the French forces have either fled or surrendered. After the battle we learn that Pierre is one of the freed prisoners.

Quote from the chapter:

A volley was heard, and some bullets whistled past, while others plashed against something. The Cossacks and Dólokhov galloped after Pétya into the gateway of the courtyard. In the dense wavering smoke some of the French threw down their arms and ran out of the bushes to meet the Cossacks, while others ran down the hill toward the pond. Pétya was galloping along the courtyard, but instead of holding the reins he waved both his arms about rapidly and strangely, slipping farther and farther to one side in his saddle. His horse, having galloped up to a campfire that was smoldering in the morning light, stopped suddenly, and Pétya fell heavily on to the wet ground. The Cossacks saw that his arms and legs jerked rapidly though his head was quite motionless. A bullet had pierced his skull. After speaking to the senior French officer, who came out of the house with a white handkerchief tied to his sword and announced that they surrendered, Dólokhov dismounted and went up to Pétya, who lay motionless with outstretched arms. "Done for!" he said with a frown, and went to the gate to meet Denísov who was riding toward him.

"Killed?" cried Denísov, recognizing from a distance the unmistakably lifeless attitude—very familiar to him—in which Pétya's body was lying.

Book 14, Chapter 12

Pierre's march with the prisoners out of Moscow was very difficult, but from this hard situation Pierre gained spiritual insights about how to bear suffering.

Summary:

Pierre's march in the French convoy, from Moscow to the village where he was eventually freed, was very disordered and difficult. The convoy was melting and constantly changing. Half of the convoy's wagons, laden with provisions, had been captured by Cossacks, the other half had gone on ahead. Many French had deserted the convoy. Much of the artillery was gone and was replaced with Marshal Junot's enormous baggage train. Many wagons were captured or abandoned. Many of the prisoners had escaped, been shot or died. Of the 350 prisoners who left Moscow, only 100 were left. The separated groups of prisoners which departed Moscow had merged into one group. Pierre was able to rejoin Karatáev along the way, but since Karatáev was very ill Pierre now for some reason found it difficult to spend time with him. Pierre was shoeless and his feet gave him great pain. He was dirty and lice infested. Yet, there were spiritual insights to be gained from this experience. Pierre learned that suffering and joy are relative, and that it is possible to carry on under great privations with the proper outlook. The more difficult his position became, Pierre found, and the more terrible the future, the more independent of that position in which he found himself were the joyful and comforting thoughts, memories, and imaginings that came to him.

Quote from the chapter:

While imprisoned in the shed Pierre had learned not with his intellect but with his whole being, by life itself, that man is created for happiness, that happiness is within him, in the satisfaction of simple human needs, and that all unhappiness arises not from privation but from superfluity. And now during these last three weeks of the march he had learned still another new, consolatory truth—that nothing in this world is terrible. He had learned that as there is no condition in which man can be happy and entirely free, so there is no condition in which he need be unhappy and lack freedom. He learned that suffering and freedom have their limits and that those limits are very near together; that the person in a bed of roses with one crumpled petal suffered as keenly as he now, sleeping on the bare damp earth with one side growing chilled while the other was warming; and that when he had put on tight dancing shoes he had suffered just as he did now when he walked with bare feet that were covered with sores—his footgear having long since fallen to pieces. He discovered that when he had married his wife—of his own free will as it had seemed to him—he had been no more free than now when they locked him up at night in a stable. Of all that he himself subsequently termed his sufferings, but which at the time he scarcely felt, the worst was the state of his bare, raw, and scab-covered feet. (The horseflesh was appetizing and nourishing, the saltpeter flavor of the gunpowder they used instead of salt was even pleasant; there was no great cold, it was always warm walking in the daytime, and at night there were the campfires; the lice that devoured him warmed his body.) The one thing that was at first hard to bear was his feet.

Book 14, Chapter 13

While on the march, Pierre hears Karatáev tell a fable about suffering and forgiveness. Pierre finds the story very moving.

Summary:

This chapter consists mainly in a fable which Pierre hears Karatáev tell often. Pierre had long been familiar with that story. Karatáev had told it to him alone some half-dozen times and always with an especially joyful emotion. But well as he knew it, Pierre now listened to that tale as to something new, and the quiet rapture Karatáev evidently felt as he told it communicated itself also to Pierre. The story was of an old merchant who lived a good and God-fearing life with his family, and who went once to the Nízhni fair with a companion—a rich merchant where he is framed for a murder he did not commit. The merchant is sent to Siberia for hard labor. In Siberia, the person who actually committed the murder meets the old merchant. Moved by seeing what he has done, the actual murderer confesses to the authorities, (he was a great sinner). This leads to a pardon from the Czar for the old merchant, but the merchant dies before the pardon arrives.

Quote from the chapter:

"And the old man said, 'God will forgive you, we are all sinners in His sight. I suffer for my own sins,' and he wept bitter tears. Well, and what do you think, dear friends?" Karatáev continued, his face brightening more and more with a rapturous smile as if what he now had to tell contained the chief charm and the whole meaning of his story: "What do you think, dear fellows? That murderer confessed to the authorities. 'I have taken six lives,' he says (he was a great sinner), 'but what I am most sorry for is this old man. Don't let him suffer because of me.' So he confessed and it was all written down and the papers sent off in due form. The place was a long way off, and while they were judging, what with one thing and another, filling in the papers all in due form—the authorities I mean—time passed. The affair reached the Tsar. After a while the Tsar's decree came: to set the merchant free and give him a compensation that had been awarded. The paper arrived and they began to look for the old man. 'Where is the old man who has been suffering innocently and in vain? A paper has come from the Tsar!' so they began looking for him," here Karatáev's lower jaw trembled, "but God had already forgiven him—he was dead! That's how it was, dear fellows!" Karatáev concluded and sat for a long time silent, gazing before him with a smile. And Pierre's soul was dimly but joyfully filled not by the story itself but by its mysterious significance: by the rapturous joy that lit up Karatáev's face as he told it, and the mystic significance of that joy.

Book 14, Chapter 14

The convoy stops and looks on in awe as Napoleon's entourage passes. Behind them, before the convoy begins to move again, Karatáev is apparently executed.

Summary:

The day after hearing the story, the convoy is passed by the impressive entourage of Napoleon, whose sleek cavalry rode before an elegant carriage drawn by six gray horses, and accompanied by other members of the emperor's staff. Before the convoy began moving again, Pierre saw Karatáev whom he had not yet seen that morning. On his face, besides the look of joyful emotion it had worn yesterday while telling the tale of the merchant who suffered innocently, there was

now an expression of quiet solemnity. Karatáev seems to want to speak to Pierre, but Pierre does not go to him. They hear a shot, and two French soldiers who had been near Karatáev go running by, one with a smoking gun. Behind him, where Karatáev had been sitting, the dog begins to howl. His comrades avoided looking back at the place where the shot had been fired and the dog was howling, just as Pierre did, but there was a set look on all their faces.

Quote from the chapter:

Two French soldiers ran past Pierre, one of whom carried a lowered and smoking gun. They both looked pale, and in the expression on their faces—one of them glanced timidly at Pierre—there was something resembling what he had seen on the face of the young soldier at the execution. Pierre looked at the soldier and remembered that, two days before, that man had burned his shirt while drying it at the fire and how they had laughed at him. Behind him, where Karatáev had been sitting, the dog began to howl. "What a stupid beast! Why is it howling?" thought Pierre. His comrades, the prisoner soldiers walking beside him, avoided looking back at the place where the shot had been fired and the dog was howling, just as Pierre did, but there was a set look on all their faces.

Book 14, Chapter 15

The convoy overnights at the village of Shámshevo. Pierre has a vivid dream depicting the nature of God and Life. In the morning, the village is captured by Denísov and Dólokhov. Pierre weeps for joy. Pétya is buried.

Summary:

That evening the convoy stops for the night in the village of Shámshevo. Pierre has an amazing vivid dream depicting the nature of God and Life. "Life is everything. Life is God. Everything changes and moves and that movement is God. And while there is life there is joy in consciousness of the divine. To love life is to love God, dreams Pierre. Waking up, he sees Platón's dog. Pierre was just on the point of realizing that Karatáev had been killed when his mind drifted to another memory, pleasant but seemingly unrelated. In the morning, the village is captured by the partisan forces of Denísov and Dólokhov. The hussars and Cossacks crowded round the prisoners; one offered them clothes, another boots, and a third bread. Pierre sobbed as he sat among them. He hugged the first soldier who approached him, and kissed him, weeping. Dólokhov stood at the gate of the ruined house, overseeing a crowd of disarmed Frenchmen passing by. Denísov, bareheaded and with a gloomy face, walked behind some Cossacks who were carrying the body of Pétya Rostóv to a hole that had been dug in the garden.

Quote from the chapter:

This globe was alive—a vibrating ball without fixed dimensions. Its whole surface consisted of drops closely pressed together, and all these drops moved and changed places, sometimes several of them merging into one, sometimes one dividing into many. Each drop tried to spread out and occupy as much space as possible, but others striving to do the same compressed it, sometimes destroyed it, and sometimes merged with it. "That is life," said the old teacher. "How simple and clear it is," thought Pierre. "How is it I did not know it before?" "God is in the midst, and each drop tries to expand so as to reflect Him to the greatest extent. And it grows, merges, disappears from the surface, sinks to the depths, and again emerges. There now, Karatáev has spread out and disappeared. Do you understand, my child?" said the teacher.

Book 14, Chapter 16

As the cold weather arrived, the French army was disintegrating rapidly and at a steady rate.

Summary:

When the cold weather set in at the end of October, the flight of the French assumed a still more tragic character, with men freezing, or roasting themselves to death at the campfires, while carriages carrying looted property stolen by the Emperor, kings, and dukes kept passing them on the road. The army was shrinking rapidly, and at a steady rate regardless of conditions like the cold, who was chasing them, who was blocking their way, and so on. From Moscow to Vyázma the French army of 73,000 men shrunk by half, even though only 5,000 were lost in battle. The army lost half its men once again from Vyázma to Smolénsk, half again from Smolénsk, and half again from the Berëzina to Vílna. (So, in other words, only about one-sixteenth of the French soldiers leaving Moscow were with the French army arriving in Vilna.) The army was falling apart. Men were deserting right and left. Many through away their ammunition. Many ran away in search of food. It was no longer certain these men could be made to fight as an army if the need arose. Yet, Napoleon and those around him pretended to be in charge while secretly thinking about how they could get away themselves.

Quote from the chapter:

I deem it my duty to report to Your Majesty the condition of the various corps I have had occasion to observe during different stages of the last two or three days' march. They are almost disbanded. Scarcely a quarter of the soldiers remain with the standards of their regiments, the others go off by themselves in different directions hoping to find food and escape discipline. In general they regard Smolénsk as the place where they hope to recover. During the last few days many of the men have been seen to throw away their cartridges and their arms. In such a state of affairs, whatever your ultimate plans may be, the interest of Your Majesty's service demands that the army should be rallied at Smolénsk and should first of all be freed from ineffectives, such as dismounted cavalry, unnecessary baggage, and artillery material that is no longer in proportion to the present forces. The soldiers, who are worn out with hunger and fatigue, need these supplies as well as a few days' rest. Many have died these last days on the road or at the bivouacs. This state of things is continually becoming worse and makes one fear that unless a prompt remedy is applied the troops will no longer be under control in case of an engagement.

Book 14, Chapter 17

The movements of the French from Moscow back to the Niemen were confused and disorderly. They abandoned artillery and baggage, and lost many men to desertion.

Summary:

The separate portions of the French army, under Murat, Davout and Ney were moving confusedly in flight from Moscow back to the Niemen. Their movements were very confused and disorderly. Because the French were moving so quickly and erratically, Russian scouts were not of much use. Often neither army knew the location of the other, and the French sometimes ran right into the

pursuing Russians simply by accident. They moved in mob-like groups. In front of the French mobs all fled - the Emperor, then the kings, then the dukes. They abandoned one another, much of their heavy baggage, and much of their artillery, and half their men, their military force melting away rapidly. Ney, for example, who had once had a corps of ten thousand men reached Napoleon at Orshá with only one thousand men left, having abandoned all the rest and all his cannon.

Quote from the chapter:

One army fled and the other pursued. Beyond Smolénsk there were several different roads available for the French, and one would have thought that during their stay of four days they might have learned where the enemy was, might have arranged some more advantageous plan and undertaken something new. But after a four days' halt the mob, with no maneuvers or plans, again began running along the beaten track, neither to the right nor to the left but along the old—the worst—road, through Krásnoe and Orshá. Expecting the enemy from behind and not in front, the French separated in their flight and spread out over a distance of twenty-four hours. In front of them all fled the Emperor, then the kings, then the dukes. The Russian army, expecting Napoleon to take the road to the right beyond the Dnieper—which was the only reasonable thing for him to do—themselves turned to the right and came out onto the highroad at Krásnoe. And here as in a game of blindman's bluff the French ran into our vanguard. Seeing their enemy unexpectedly the French fell into confusion and stopped short from the sudden fright, but then they resumed their flight, abandoning their comrades who were farther behind. Then for three days separate portions of the French army—first Murat's (the vice-king's), then Davout's, and then Ney's—ran, as it were, the gauntlet of the Russian army.

Book 14, Chapter 18

The botched retreat of the French from Moscow is a great example of how absurd the great man theory of history really is. Rather than admit this, however, historians make up a new definition of greatness.

Summary:

During their flight from Moscow, the French almost seemed like they were just trying to screw up. What they were doing made no sense at all. So, obviously, Napoleon was not personally guiding history. One would think, therefore, that historians, who attributed the actions of the mass to the will of one man, could not possibly make the story of the retreat fit into their great man theory. But no! What we find instead is that mountains of books have been written by the historians about this campaign, praising Napoleon's arrangements, maneuvers, plans, and the military genius shown by the marshals. Instead of acknowledging that the facts contradict their precious theory, historians prefer to rationalize and redefine greatness. They say, in effect, that a "great" man can do nothing wrong, so therefore there is no atrocity for which a "great" man can be blamed.

Quote from the chapter:

And lastly, the final departure of the great Emperor from his heroic army is presented to us by the historians as something great and characteristic of genius. Even that final running away, described in ordinary language as the lowest depth of baseness which every child is taught to be ashamed of—even that act finds justification in the historians' language. When it is impossible to stretch the very elastic threads of historical ratiocination any farther, when actions are clearly contrary to all that humanity calls right or even just, the historians produce a saving conception of

"greatness." "Greatness," it seems, excludes the standards of right and wrong. For the "great" man nothing is wrong, there is no atrocity for which a "great" man can be blamed.

Book 14, Chapter 19

Russians reading about the last part of the campaign of 1812 may wish the French had all been captured or destroyed, but in reality this would have been senseless to try even if it were possible.

Summary:

At first glance, it might appear that Russia should have captured or destroyed the entire French army during the last part of the war. Afterall, the Russians had the French surrounded and outnumbered, and the French army was in really bad shape by that point. But, for the Russians to have tried to capture or destroy the French at that point really would have made no sense. The French were doing there best to get away as fast as possible. Why not just let them go? The Russians didn't have enough food and manpower to hold that many prisoners. Even left alone, only about one percent of the French would make it home. And since the French knew that they would starve and freeze as Russian prisoners, they had no reason to surrender peacefully. Plus, trying to capture and destroy the French would have cost Russian lives as well. So, really, it would have been senseless and impossible to try to capture and destroy the French. Sometimes historians try to blame Kutúzov or others for not capturing and destroying the French army, but those historians are not looking at the situation at the time realistically.

Quote from the chapter:

Yet one need only discard the study of the reports and general plans and consider the movement of those hundreds of thousands of men who took a direct part in the events, and all the questions that seemed insoluble easily and simply receive an immediate and certain solution. The aim of cutting off Napoleon and his army never existed except in the imaginations of a dozen people. It could not exist because it was senseless and unattainable. The people had a single aim: to free their land from invasion. That aim was attained in the first place of itself, as the French ran away, and so it was only necessary not to stop their flight. Secondly it was attained by the guerrilla warfare which was destroying the French, and thirdly by the fact that a large Russian army was following the French, ready to use its strength in case their movement stopped. The Russian army had to act like a whip to a running animal. And the experienced driver knew it was better to hold the whip raised as a menace than to strike the running animal on the head.

Book 15, Chapter 1

Natásha and Mary fall into a profound state of grief after Prince Andrew dies. In a few weeks Mary has to leave for Moscow, but the grieving Natásha won't accompany her. News of Pétya arrives.

Summary:

After Andrew's death a menacing cloud of grief which lasted for days fell over Natásha and Princess Mary. They dared not look life in the face. It was such a painful wound. They spoke little, not even to one another, and when they did it was of very unimportant matters. It was like this day

after day. But, after two weeks Princess Mary, now guardian of her nephew and owner of the Bolkónski family estates, needed to leave this secluded contemplation and return to life. Mary will be going to Moscow and she invites Natásha to go with her. The Rostóv's, worried about Natásha, thought the change would do her good. But Natásha refuses to go along with her. Natásha continues spending most of her days alone, bereaved, in her room, all alone in her grief. She imagined conversations with Andrew. She imagined Andrew telling her it would be terrible if she sat forever beside him as he suffered. She said even that would be better than losing him. She was overcome by sweet sorrow and tears. She seemed in her grief to be now penetrating a mystery of life. Just then, she learns that a letter has arrived with the horrible news about Pétya.

Quote from the chapter:

She was gazing where she knew him to be; but she could not imagine him otherwise than as he had been here. She now saw him again as he had been at Mytíshchi, at Tróitsa, and at Yaroslávl. She saw his face, heard his voice, repeated his words and her own, and sometimes devised other words they might have spoken. There he is lying back in an armchair in his velvet cloak, leaning his head on his thin pale hand. His chest is dreadfully hollow and his shoulders raised. His lips are firmly closed, his eyes glitter, and a wrinkle comes and goes on his pale forehead. One of his legs twitches just perceptibly, but rapidly. Natásha knows that he is struggling with terrible pain. "What is that pain like? Why does he have that pain? What does he feel? How does it hurt him?" thought Natásha. He noticed her watching him, raised his eyes, and began to speak seriously: "One thing would be terrible," said he: "to bind oneself forever to a suffering man. It would be continual torture." And he looked searchingly at her. Natásha as usual answered before she had time to think what she would say. She said: "This can't go on—it won't. You will get well—quite well." She now saw him from the commencement of that scene and relived what she had then felt. She recalled his long sad and severe look at those words and understood the meaning of the rebuke and despair in that protracted gaze.

Book 15, Chapter 2

Learning of her son Pétya's death, Countess Rostóv becomes delirious. Natásha sits with her mother for three days. Caring for her mother helps pull Natásha out of her own despair.

Summary:

Natásha's grief has left her feeling estranged and almost hostile with her family. When she learns a letter about Pétya has arrived, Natásha is unconcerned. Seeing the effect of the letter in her father's face, however, instantly snaps Natásha back to reality. Her mother is in even worse shape, totally distraught and almost insane with grief. Unable to accept Pétya's death, the Countess drifts intermittently into delirium, imagining that her son is still alive and has returned to visit them. Seeing her mother like this breaks the spell grief held over Natásha. Natásha stays by her mother's side for three days, holding her and caring for her, until at last her mother can face the loss of her son. Then, embracing her daughter, the countess began to weep for the first time since learning of Pétya's death.

Quote from the chapter:

Natásha looked at her with eyes full of tears and in her look there was nothing but love and an entreaty for forgiveness. "My darling Mummy!" she repeated, straining all the power of her love to find some way of taking on herself the excess of grief that crushed her mother. And again in a futile struggle with reality her mother, refusing to believe that she could live when her beloved boy

was killed in the bloom of life, escaped from reality into a world of delirium. Natásha did not remember how that day passed nor that night, nor the next day and night. She did not sleep and did not leave her mother. Her persevering and patient love seemed completely to surround the countess every moment, not explaining or consoling, but recalling her to life.

Book 15, Chapter 3

Natásha continued caring for her mother. For Natásha, this begins a healing process which would eventually reach completion. But the Countess will never be the same. Natásha and Princess Mary developed a deep personal bond.

Summary:

For three weeks Natásha remained constantly at her mother's side. No one else's presence helped her mother nearly so much as Natásha's. But Countess Rostóv's wounded spirit was beyond healing. Pétya's death had ripped half her life away, and she could never recover from that. On the other hand, caring for her mother helped heal Natásha. Before, she had thought her life was over, but her love for her mother unexpectedly awoke love inside Natásha, which restored her to life. Besides all this, Pétya's death brought Princess Mary and Natásha even closer together than had the recent loss of Prince Andrew. It caused a feeling stronger than friendship to spring up between them; an exclusive feeling of life being possible only in each other's presence. Natásha's emotional wounds had started to heal from within. But physically, she had grown thin and pale and so weak that they all worried about her health. So, at the end of January, when Princess Mary finally left for Moscow, Count Rostóv insisted on Natásha's going along with her to consult the doctors.

Quote from the chapter:

"Mary," she said timidly, drawing Princess Mary's hand to herself, "Mary, you mustn't think me wicked. No? Mary darling, how I love you! Let us be quite, quite friends." And Natásha, embracing her, began kissing her face and hands, making Princess Mary feel shy but happy by this demonstration of her feelings. From that day a tender and passionate friendship such as exists only between women was established between Princess Mary and Natásha. They were continually kissing and saying tender things to one another and spent most of their time together. When one went out the other became restless and hastened to rejoin her. Together they felt more in harmony with one another than either of them felt with herself when alone. A feeling stronger than friendship sprang up between them; an exclusive feeling of life being possible only in each other's presence.

Book 15, Chapter 4

From Vyázma through the battle at Krásnoe, very rapid troop movement caused great attrition to both armies. The Russians were victorious at Krásnoe, although Kutúzov would have preferred they had not fought.

Summary:

After the encounter at Vyázma, the fleeing French and the Russians who pursued them continued as far as Krásnoe without a battle. Continuous marching at the rate of twenty-seven miles a day took a huge toll on both armies. The rapidity of the Russian pursuit, unparalleled for such a time of the year, was equally destructive to both sides. The Russian army which left that place a hundred thousand strong reached Krásnoe with only fifty thousand men. Along the way, various plans for Russian attacks and maneuvers were put forward to the Russian commander-in-chief, but Kutúzov wisely tried instead to hasten the French on while doing his best to ease the burden on the Russian army. Russian military commander's longed to distinguish themselves particularly whenever the Russians stumbled on the French army. So, it was at Krásnoe, where the Russians happened upon Napoleon himself along with a French army of sixteen thousand men. Despite all Kutúzov's efforts to avoid that ruinous encounter and to preserve his troops, the pitiful massacre of the broken mob of French soldiers by worn-out Russians continued at Krásnoe for three days. There the Russians took twenty-six thousand prisoners, several hundred cannon, and a "marshal's staff," but failed to capture Napoleon or any other well-known French military leader. For this and other supposed failings, Kutúzov was roundly reproached by historians while Napoleon is undeservedly praised.

Quote from the chapter:

They blamed Kutúzov and said that from the very beginning of the campaign he had prevented their vanquishing Napoleon, that he thought of nothing but satisfying his passions and would not advance from the Linen Factories because he was comfortable there, that at Krásnoe he checked the advance because on learning that Napoleon was there he had quite lost his head, and that it was probable that he had an understanding with Napoleon and had been bribed by him, and so on, and so on. Not only did his contemporaries, carried away by their passions, talk in this way, but posterity and history have acclaimed Napoleon as grand, while Kutúzov is described by foreigners as a crafty, dissolute, weak old courtier, and by Russians as something indefinite—a sort of puppet useful only because he had a Russian name.

Book 15, Chapter 5

Kutúzov was one of those rare individuals able to discern the will of Providence and to unreservedly submit their personal will to it. Yet, Russian historians remember him as a blunderer, coward, courtier and procrastinator.

Summary:

It would be difficult to find anyone in history who so completely accomplished anything so worthy as that to which all Kutúzov's efforts were directed in 1812, all directed to one and the same threefold end: (1) to brace all his strength for conflict with the French, (2) to defeat them, and (3) to drive them out of Russia, while minimizing as far as possible the sufferings of the Russian people and army. Unswayed by what others said or thought, often paying them no heed, this old man's simple Russian soul served only the will of Providence. His national feeling, which he possessed in full purity and strength, gave him an extraordinary ability to penetrate the meaning of the events then occurring. And only that feeling placed him on that highest human pedestal from which he, the commander in chief, devoted all his powers not to slaying and destroying men but to saving and showing pity on them. He understood historical events in their full implication better than those around him, and could make better decisions. He alone during the whole retreat insisted that battles, which were useless then, should not be fought, and that a new war should not

be begun nor the frontiers of Russia crossed. Yet, ironically, Russian historians praise Napoleon's genius while deprecating this true Russian hero.

Quote from the chapter:

But how did that old man, alone, in opposition to the general opinion, so truly discern the importance of the people's view of the events that in all his activity he was never once untrue to it? The source of that extraordinary power of penetrating the meaning of the events then occuring lay in the national feeling which he possessed in full purity and strength. Only the recognition of the fact that he possessed this feeling caused the people in so strange a manner, contrary to the Tsar's wish, to select him—an old man in disfavor—to be their representative in the national war. And only that feeling placed him on that highest human pedestal from which he, the commander in chief, devoted all his powers not to slaying and destroying men but to saving and showing pity on them. That simple, modest, and therefore truly great, figure could not be cast in the false mold of a European hero—the supposed ruler of men—that history has invented. To a lackey no man can be great, for a lackey has his own conception of greatness.

Book 15, Chapter 6

On the first day of what is called the battle of Krásnoe, Kutúzov observes the sorry state of their many French prisoners. He tells the Russian troops that the war's end is near and that they should deal kindly with the French prisoners.

Summary:

After the first day of what is called the battle of Krásnoe, (not a battle at all really since the French barely fought), Kutúzov rode with a large suite of discontented generals. He saw enormous numbers of tattered French prisoners, seven thousand in all were captured that day, most in miserable shape, wretched, wrapped and bandaged in anything they had been able to get hold of, many disfigured by frostbite, and nearly all with red, swollen and festering eyes. A Russian general riding alongside Kutúzov was just then attempting to make a report to him, but Kutúzov seemed preoccupied with his own thoughts. He paused in front of a regiment where the commander intended to present him some captured French standards in front of thousands of assembled Russian soldiers. To this crowd Kutúzov said "I thank you all for your hard and faithful service. The victory is complete and Russia will not forget you!" "Hur-r-rah!" roared thousands of voices in reply. Then, not in the voice of a commander-in-chief, but like any ordinary old man who wanted to tell his comrades something very important, Kutúzov asked that the French prisoners be treated humanely, even though France had started the war. As Kutúzov galloped off, there remained with the men a feeling of majestic triumph combined with pity for the foe and consciousness of the justice of Russia's cause, perfectly expressed by that old man's good-natured speech, expressed in the men's joyous and long-sustained shouts of appreciation for their great general.

Quote from the chapter:

"You see, brothers, I know it's hard for you, but it can't be helped! Bear up; it won't be for long now! We'll see our visitors off and then we'll rest. The Tsar won't forget your service. It is hard for you, but still you are at home while they—you see what they have come to," said he, pointing to the prisoners. "Worse off than our poorest beggars. While they were strong we didn't spare ourselves, but now we may even pity them. They are human beings too. Isn't it so, lads?" He looked around, and in the direct, respectful, wondering gaze fixed upon him he read sympathy

with what he had said. His face grew brighter and brighter with an old man's mild smile, which drew the corners of his lips and eyes into a cluster of wrinkles. He ceased speaking and bowed his head as if in perplexity. "But after all who asked them here? Serves them right, the bloody bastards!" he cried, suddenly lifting his head. And flourishing his whip he rode off at a gallop for the first time during the whole campaign, and left the broken ranks of the soldiers laughing joyfully and shouting "Hurrah!"

Book 15, Chapter 7

An infantry regiment halts in a village on the high road to set up camp for the night. It's the night of the last day of Krásnoe battles. The men are in good spirits and work in teams to get ready their camp for the night.

Summary:

Arriving in a village on the highroad, the men at once set to work to prepare their camp for the night. Everything was done without any orders being given. One group waded through knee-deep snow and entered a nearby birch forest to gather firewood. From there could be heard the sounds of axes and swords, the crashing of branches, and merry voices. Another group got busy getting out caldrons and rye biscuit, and feeding the horses. A third group scattered through the village finding quarters for the staff officers, carrying out the French corpses that were in the huts, and dragging away boards and dry wood. Many men worked together cheerily hauling in a wooden fence for shelter against the wind. The men sang and joked as they worked, interlarding their talk with aimless expletives and merry senseless words of abuse. Stores of wood were brought for the night, shelters were rigged up for the officers, caldrons were being boiled, and everything put in good order for the cold night ahead. The men of the Eight Company settled in behind a wattle fence, took roll, had supper, and settled down round the fires for the night — some repairing their footgear, some smoking pipes, and some stripping themselves naked to steam the lice out of their shirts. Meanwhile, the chief officers gathered in a hut and talked over plans for next day. It was proposed to make a flank march to the left, cut off the Vice-King (Murat) and capture him.

Quote from the chapter:

Some fifteen men with merry shouts were shaking down the high wattle wall of a shed, the roof of which had already been removed. "Now then, all together—shove!" cried the voices, and the huge surface of the wall, sprinkled with snow and creaking with frost, was seen swaying in the gloom of the night. The lower stakes cracked more and more and at last the wall fell, and with it the men who had been pushing it. Loud, coarse laughter and joyous shouts ensued. "Now then, catch hold in twos! Hand up the lever! That's it.... Where are you shoving to?" "Now, all together! But wait a moment, boys... With a song!" All stood silent, and a soft, pleasant velvety voice began to sing. At the end of the third verse as the last note died away, twenty voices roared out at once: "Oo-oo-oo-oo! That's it. All together! Heave away, boys!..." but despite their united efforts the wattle hardly moved, and in the silence that followed the heavy breathing of the men was audible. "Here, you of the Sixth Company! Devils that you are! Lend a hand... will you? You may want us one of these days."

Book 15, Chapter 8

The men of the Eight Company are gathered around a campfire. Those who were still in the army by this time were only the most fit of the troops. They talk about their experiences and joke as they sat around the fire.

Summary:

One would think the Russian soldiers living under such incredibly harsh conditions as these did, lacking warm boots, coats, shelter and even food, would present a very sad spectacle. On the contrary, the army had never presented a more cheerful and animated aspect. This was because anyone who became too physically and mentally weak to go on with this hard life was sifted out of the army day by day as the gradually had to abandon the army. By now, only the very flower of the army remained. The men of the Eight Company are settled in around a campfire for the night. For permission to sit by their wattle they demand contributions of fuel from newcomers. There was general conversation about the French prisoners, prior battles, burying the dead, and like topics. Some of the things some of the soldiers said were obviously not true, and they chided one another as liars, or to go gather more wood for the fire. Gradually the conversation died down and in the silence that ensued, the snoring of those who had fallen asleep could be heard. Others turned over and warmed themselves, now and again exchanging a few words. From a campfire a hundred paces off came a sound of general, merry laughter. A few of the men wandered over to the other campfire to see what was going on. The others drifted off to sleep.

Quote from the chapter:

"What a lot of those Frenchies were taken today, and the fact is that not one of them had what you might call real boots on," said a soldier, starting a new theme. "They were no more than make-believes." "The Cossacks have taken their boots. They were clearing the hut for the colonel and carried them out. It was pitiful to see them, boys," put in the dancer. "As they turned them over one seemed still alive and, would you believe it, he jabbered something in their lingo." "But they're a clean folk, lads," the first man went on; "he was white—as white as birchbark—and some of them are such fine fellows, you might think they were nobles." "Well, what do you think? They make soldiers of all classes there." "But they don't understand our talk at all," said the dancer with a puzzled smile. "I asked him whose subject he was, and he jabbered in his own way. A queer lot!" "But it's strange, friends," continued the man who had wondered at their whiteness, "the peasants at Mozháysk were saying that when they began burying the dead—where the battle was you know—well, those dead had been lying there for nearly a month, and says the peasant, 'they lie as white as paper, clean, and not as much smell as a puff of powder smoke.'"

Book 15, Chapter 9

A very ill French officer and his orderly, who have both been hiding in the forest, approach one of the Russian campfires. The Russians show kindness, giving them both food and finding for the unwell officer an indoor place to sleep.

Summary:

Out of the forest into the bright firelight of the Russian Fifth Company stepped two strangely clad human figures clinging to one another. These were two Frenchmen who had been hiding in the forest, an officer and his orderly. The exhausted French officer, who is very ill, was Ramballe and the other Frenchman is his orderly. The French officer is so ill he can barely walk. The Russian

soldiers treat them with great kindness, spreading a greatcoat on the ground for the sick man, and bringing some buckwheat porridge and vodka for both of them. The sick officer refuses the food and resting his head on his elbow lay silent beside the campfire, looking at the Russian soldiers with red and vacant eyes and groaning occasionally. Permission is obtained for the French officer to share the hut of one of the Russian officers, and the men carry him there. The French orderly, who appears tipsy, remains by the campfire and sings for the Russians, who enjoy but do not understand the song since none of these men is bilingual. They give him some more porridge and he with a laugh sets to work on his third bowl. The Russians look on smiling. realizing that although they have fought in the opposing army, all of them are human. In the night sky above, the stars are busy whispering something gladsome and mysterious to one another.

Quote from the chapter:

They gave him some more porridge and Morel with a laugh set to work on his third bowl. All the young soldiers smiled gaily as they watched him. The older men, who thought it undignified to amuse themselves with such nonsense, continued to lie at the opposite side of the fire, but one would occasionally raise himself on an elbow and glance at Morel with a smile. "They are men too," said one of them as he wrapped himself up in his coat. "Even wormwood grows on its own root." "O Lord, O Lord! How starry it is! Tremendous! That means a hard frost...." They all grew silent. The stars, as if knowing that no one was looking at them, began to disport themselves in the dark sky: now flaring up, now vanishing, now trembling, they were busy whispering something gladsome and mysterious to one another.

Book 15, Chapter 10

The Emperor tells Kutúzov of his dissatisfaction at mistakes made at Krásnoe and the Berëzina, and his intention to pursue Napoleon beyond Russia. Kutúzov receives the Order of St. George of the First Class.

Summary:

Much is written about the battle of Berëzina, where the broken bridge resulted in a tragic spectacle for the French, and a Russian plan devised in Petersburg failed to catch Napoleon in a strategic trap. Tolstoy believes that historians overestimate the importance of this one battle. To Tolstoy, it only shows the fallacy of all the plans for cutting off the enemy's retreat and the soundness of Kutúzov's wish to simply follow the enemy rather than fighting him. Nonetheless, the failure of the Petersburg Berëzina plan was blamed on Kutúzov most of all, and Kutúzov became all the more a target for dissatisfaction, contempt, and ridicule, more and more strongly expressed. Kutúzov could now see that his day was over, that his part was played, and that the power he was supposed to hold was no longer his. And he understood this not merely from the attitude of Alexander's court. He could also see that the military business in which he had played his part was ended and felt that his mission was accomplished; and at the same time he no longer felt physically up the job. He needed rest. People around him at Vilna noticed that Kutúzov now appeared less interested in military affairs and more interested in social enjoyments. When the Emperor arrived at Vilna his entourage was ceremoniously received. Speaking to Kutúzov privately, the Emperor let Kutúzov know he wasn't happy with the job Kutúzov had been doing. Kutúzov, true to form, made no rejoinder or remark to the Emperor. The same submissive, expressionless look with which he had listened to the Emperor's commands on the field of

Austerlitz seven years before settled on his face now. On a happier note, however, during this visit Kutúzov was given the Order of St. George of the First Class.

Quote from the chapter:

The sole importance of the crossing of the Berëzina lies in the fact that it plainly and indubitably proved the fallacy of all the plans for cutting off the enemy's retreat and the soundness of the only possible line of action—the one Kutúzov and the general mass of the army demanded—namely, simply to follow the enemy up. The French crowd fled at a continually increasing speed and all its energy was directed to reaching its goal. It fled like a wounded animal and it was impossible to block its path. This was shown not so much by the arrangements it made for crossing as by what took place at the bridges. When the bridges broke down, unarmed soldiers, people from Moscow and women with children who were with the French transport, all—carried on by vis inertiæ—pressed forward into boats and into the ice-covered water and did not surrender. That impulse was reasonable. The condition of fugitives and of pursuers was equally bad. As long as they remained with their own people each might hope for help from his fellows and the definite place he held among them. But those who surrendered, while remaining in the same pitiful plight, would be on a lower level to claim a share in the necessities of life. The French did not need to be informed of the fact that half the prisoners—with whom the Russians did not know what to do—perished of cold and hunger despite their captors' desire to save them; they felt that it could not be otherwise. The most compassionate Russian commanders, those favorable to the French—and even the Frenchmen in the Russian service—could do nothing for the prisoners. The French perished from the conditions to which the Russian army was itself exposed. It was impossible to take bread and clothes from our hungry and indispensable soldiers to give to the French who, though not harmful, or hated, or guilty, were simply unnecessary. Some Russians even did that, but they were exceptions.

Book 15, Chapter 11

Control of the Russian army is shifted away from Kutúzov. His work to save Russia complete, Kutúzov dies.

Summary:

Kutúzov had received the Order of St. George of the First Class and the Emperor showed him the highest honors, but everyone knew of the imperial dissatisfaction with him. The Emperor's displeasure with Kutúzov was specially increased at Vílna by the fact that Kutúzov evidently could not or would not understand the importance of the coming campaign outside of Russia's borders. Kutúzov alone openly expressed his opinion that no fresh war could improve the position or add to the glory of Russia, but could only lower the glorious position that Russia had gained. He tried to prove to the Emperor the impossibility of levying fresh troops, spoke of the hardships already endured by the people, of the possibility of failure and so forth. This being Kutúzov strong opinion, he was naturally regarded as merely a hindrance and obstacle to the impending war. With this object his staff was gradually reconstructed and its real strength removed and transferred to the Emperor. Toll, Konovnítsyn, and Ermólov received fresh appointments. Everyone spoke loudly of the field marshal's great weakness and failing health. And, in fact, Kutúzov's health really was failing. After accomplishing his work to save Russia, there was nothing left for Kutúzov to do but to die, and Kutúzov died.

Quote from the chapter:

The movement of peoples from west to east was to be succeeded by a movement of peoples from east to west, and for this fresh war another leader was necessary, having qualities and views differing from Kutúzov's and animated by different motives. Alexander I was as necessary for the movement of the peoples from east to west and for the refixing of national frontiers as Kutúzov had been for the salvation and glory of Russia. Kutúzov did not understand what Europe, the balance of power, or Napoleon meant. He could not understand it. For the representative of the Russian people, after the enemy had been destroyed and Russia had been liberated and raised to the summit of her glory, there was nothing left to do as a Russian. Nothing remained for the representative of the national war but to die, and Kutúzov died.

Book 15, Chapter 12

Freed from prison, Pierre is sick for three months. It took him awhile to get used to being at liberty again, but the spiritual insights he had gained in prison, his new faith in an ever-living, ever-manifest God, remained with him.

Summary:

When Pierre was freed from prison, he found out from Denísov about the deaths of Hélène and Prince Andrew. Being free again felt strange to him and he just wanted to get away as quickly as possible from places where people were killing one another, to some peaceful refuge where he could recover himself, rest, and think over all the strange new facts he had learned. It took him quite a while to get over the feeling of being in prison. He had gone only a short distance before he fell ill and was laid up for three months. It was only gradually during his convalescence period that Pierre lost the impressions he had become accustomed to during the last few months and got used to the idea that no one could make him go anywhere tomorrow, that no one would deprive him of his warm bed, and that he would be sure to get his dinner, tea, and supper. But the spiritual insights he had gained while he was in prison stuck with him. He was now a different person than he had been earlier in life. He no longer felt tormented by needing to find an aim in life. Now he had faith—not faith in any kind of rule, or words, or ideas, but faith in an ever-living, ever-manifest God.

Quote from the chapter:

Now, however, he had learned to see the great, eternal, and infinite in everything, and therefore—to see it and enjoy its contemplation—he naturally threw away the telescope through which he had till now gazed over men's heads, and gladly regarded the ever-changing, eternally great, unfathomable, and infinite life around him. And the closer he looked the more tranquil and happy he became. That dreadful question, "What for?" which had formerly destroyed all his mental edifices, no longer existed for him. To that question, "What for?" a simple answer was now always ready in his soul: "Because there is a God, that God without whose will not one hair falls from a man's head."

Book 15, Chapter 13

Pierre's time in prison had changed him in subtle but important ways. He was different. He cared more for other people now. People like to be around him much more than before. His judgement in money matters is much better.

Summary:

In external ways Pierre seemed much the same. His appearance was little changed. But his time in the prison had somehow changed him in subtle but important ways. Now a smile at the joy of life always played round his lips, and sympathy for others shone in his eyes. Previously he had talked a great deal, grew excited when he talked, and seldom listened; now he was rarely carried away in conversation and knew how to listen so that people readily told him their most intimate secrets. He took an interest in the people around and, but did not try to change them. People appreciated this and wanted to spend time with him. They became fond of him and enjoyed speaking with him. In practical matters Pierre unexpectedly felt within himself a center of gravity he had previously lacked. And whereas formerly all pecuniary questions, such as requests for gifts of money, produced in him a state of hopeless agitation and perplexity. “To give or not to give?” he had asked himself. Now to his surprise he found that he no longer felt either doubt or perplexity about these questions. There was now within him a judge who by some rule unknown to him decided what should or should not be done.

Quote from the chapter:

There was a new feature in Pierre’s relations with Willarski, with the princess, with the doctor, and with all the people he now met, which gained for him the general good will. This was his acknowledgment of the impossibility of changing a man’s convictions by words, and his recognition of the possibility of everyone thinking, feeling, and seeing things each from his own point of view. This legitimate peculiarity of each individual which used to excite and irritate Pierre now became a basis of the sympathy he felt for, and the interest he took in, other people. The difference, and sometimes complete contradiction, between men’s opinions and their lives, and between one man and another, pleased him and drew from him an amused and gentle smile. In practical matters Pierre unexpectedly felt within himself a center of gravity he had previously lacked. Formerly all pecuniary questions, especially requests for money to which, as an extremely wealthy man, he was very exposed, produced in him a state of hopeless agitation and perplexity. “To give or not to give?” he had asked himself. “I have it and he needs it. But someone else needs it still more. Who needs it most? And perhaps they are both impostors?” In the old days he had been unable to find a way out of all these surmises and had given to all who asked as long as he had anything to give. Formerly he had been in a similar state of perplexity with regard to every question concerning his property, when one person advised one thing and another something else.

Book 15, Chapter 14

Moscow quickly came back to life as successive waves of Russian plunderers and other Russians returned and began repairing and rebuilding and engaging in trade. By the following year, the population of Moscow was bigger then ever.

Summary:

In this chapter, Tolstoy describes the process of Moscow coming back to life after the French depart. When the French left Moscow, all was destroyed, except something intangible yet powerful and indestructible - something like it's spirit. The first people to return were Russian plunderers from near Moscow. These first people plundered what the French had left, carrying

what they found back to their own villages or houses. As more and more plunderers came, plundering became more and more difficult for the new arrivals. But the more people came to plunder, the more rapidly was the wealth of the city and its regular life restored. All sorts of others, some drawn by curiosity, some by official duties, some by self-interest—house owners, clergy, officials of all kinds, tradesmen, artisans, and peasants—streamed into Moscow. peasants who came to plunder were stopped by the authorities and made to cart corpses out of the town. Farmers came with grain to sell, carpenters came looking for work, police resumed trying to stop theft, and so on, as the city quickly came back to life. This regeneration happened very quickly. A week after the French left Moscow already had fifteen thousand inhabitants, in a fortnight twenty-five thousand. By the autumn of 1813 the number, ever increasing and increasing, exceeded what it had been in 1812.

Quote from the chapter:

in Moscow in the month of October there was no government and no churches, shrines, riches, or houses—it was still the Moscow it had been in August. All was destroyed, except something intangible yet powerful and indestructible. The motives of those who thronged from all sides to Moscow after it had been cleared of the enemy were most diverse and personal, and at first for the most part savage and brutal. One motive only they all had in common: a desire to get to the place that had been called Moscow, to apply their activities there.

Book 15, Chapter 15

Pierre happens to meet Natásha at Mary's house. Pierre does not recognize Natásha at first. She is much changed, the room is dim, and Pierre was not expecting to see her there. He becomes aware of how very much he loves her.

Summary:

Pierre is in Moscow for a few days, paying a few social calls. The city is alive and bustling, and people are celebrating Russia's victory. He hears that Princess Mary is in town and goes to visit her. On his way to see Mary, the death, sufferings, and last days of her brother Andrew were much on Pierre's mind. He hopes Andrew did not die in the bitter mood he was in when Pierre last saw him at Borodinó, that Andrew somehow discovered the meaning of life before he died. When Pierre arrives at Mary's house, there is another woman with Mary who Pierre takes to be her companion. Pierre and Mary talk briefly about Prince Andrew and all they have been through. Pierre mentions the strange coincidence that Andrew fell in with the Rostóvs. At that point, Mary has to point out to Pierre that the woman who is in the room with them is Natásha. Pierre hadn't recognized her because her appearance has changed, the room is dim, and he was not expecting to find her there. Pierre had not been thinking much of Natásha lately. He had heard that the Rostóvs were at Kostromá but the thought of Natásha seldom occurred to him. If it did it was only as a pleasant memory of the distant past. But, once he sees her and realizes who she is, he knows he loves her. Up until then, Pierre had been denying this even to himself, but now all three could plainly see it.

Quote from the chapter:

“Do you really not recognize her?” Pierre looked again at the companion’s pale, delicate face with its black eyes and peculiar mouth, and something near to him, long forgotten and more than sweet, looked at him from those attentive eyes. “But no, it can’t be!” he thought. “This stern, thin, pale face that looks so much older! It cannot be she. It merely reminds me of her.” But at that

moment Princess Mary said, "Natásha!" And with difficulty, effort, and stress, like the opening of a door grown rusty on its hinges, a smile appeared on the face with the attentive eyes, and from that opening door came a breath of fragrance which suffused Pierre with a happiness he had long forgotten and of which he had not even been thinking—especially at that moment. It suffused him, seized him, and enveloped him completely. When she smiled doubt was no longer possible, it was Natásha and he loved her.

Book 15, Chapter 16

With two sympathetic listeners in Pierre and Princess Mary, Natásha for the first time is able to tell the painful story of her last weeks with Prince Andrew.

Summary:

Pierre, Princess Mary, and Natásha sit in Mary's rooms talking about their recent losses. Mary says that nearly every family has experienced some tragedy lately, and that it would be very difficult to deal with it without faith. Pierre agrees. Natásha seems uncertain about the role of faith. Pierre, now very concerned with what Natásha thinks of him, tells her "only one who believes that there is a God ruling us can bear a loss such as hers and... yours." Pierre hurriedly turned away from her and again addressed Princess Mary, asking about his friend's last days. Princess Mary began telling of the condition in which she had found Prince Andrew. Continuing the conversation about Prince Andrew, Natásha describes the ordeal of her last few weeks with him, from the time she realized he was traveling with them up until his death. "Yes, yes, and so...?" Pierre kept saying as he leaned toward her with his whole body and eagerly listened to her story. "Yes, yes... so he grew tranquil and softened? With all his soul he had always sought one thing—to be perfectly good—so he could not be afraid of death. The faults he had—if he had any—were not of his making. Then, when she has finished her story, and appearing somewhat agitated, Natásha leaves the room quickly. Pierre says he should be going too, but Princess Mary asks him to stay and have supper with them. Mary tells Pierre this is the first time Natásha has spoken of her last weeks with Andrew.

Quote from the chapter:

And not letting them interrupt her she went on to tell what she had never yet mentioned to anyone—all she had lived through during those three weeks of their journey and life at Yaroslávl. Pierre listened to her with lips parted and eyes fixed upon her full of tears. As he listened he did not think of Prince Andrew, nor of death, nor of what she was telling. He listened to her and felt only pity for her, for what she was suffering now while she was speaking. Princess Mary, frowning in her effort to hold back her tears, sat beside Natásha, and heard for the first time the story of those last days of her brother's and Natásha's love. Evidently Natásha needed to tell that painful yet joyful tale.

Book 15, Chapter 17

In the dining room, Mary, Natásha and Pierre discuss Pierre's wartime experiences.

Summary:

Natásha, Mary and Pierre sit down to eat at the dining room table. Mary says she heard Pierre lost 2 million rubles in Moscow. He said yes, he did. He had to pay to rebuild his Moscow houses and pay Hélène's debts, but he said he felt three times richer than before. Then they talked a lot about Pierre's wartime experiences. (This seemed like a good topic to move on to since they had just finished that draining conversation about Natásha and they wanted to get off of that.) So Pierre told them all about what happened to him, starting from when he was arrested. He tried to gloss over the bad parts, but Mary and Natásha got him to talk about it. They talked a little about Hélène, whose death had shocked Pierre. Mary quipped that Pierre was an eligible bachelor now. Pierre blushed and for a long time tried not to look at Natásha. They talked about how Pierre once wanted to kill Napoleon and how he was arrested. When he came to talking about the horrors and sufferings of prison, Pierre's emotions really began to come out. He felt like Natásha understood him. He tried to skip over the part about seeing the executions, but they wanted him to tell them about that too. Then he got to the subject of Karatáev. Pierre tried to tell them what a wonderful person Platón was. “No, you can’t understand what I learned from that illiterate man—that simple fellow”, he said. Then he told how Platón got sick and was killed because he couldn't keep up with the group. Natásha really got it, Pierre’s mental travail, and started to cry. Pierre finished his story. By now it was 3:00 AM. “Good night! It is time for bed. Before leaving, Pierre tells Natásha that sometimes new and good things grow out of tragedy. Mary sees there's something happening between Pierre and Natásha. Before going to bed, Mary and Natásha talk about how much Pierre has improved from how he used to be.

Quote from the chapter:

He told of his adventures as he had never yet recalled them. He now, as it were, saw a new meaning in all he had gone through. Now that he was telling it all to Natásha he experienced that pleasure which a man has when women listen to him—not clever women who when listening either try to remember what they hear to enrich their minds and when opportunity offers to retell it, or who wish to adopt it to some thought of their own and promptly contribute their own clever comments prepared in their little mental workshop—but the pleasure given by real women gifted with a capacity to select and absorb the very best a man shows of himself. Natásha without knowing it was all attention: she did not lose a word, no single quiver in Pierre’s voice, no look, no twitch of a muscle in his face, nor a single gesture. She caught the unfinished word in its flight and took it straight into her open heart, divining the secret meaning of all Pierre’s mental travail. Princess Mary understood his story and sympathized with him, but she now saw something else that absorbed all her attention. She saw the possibility of love and happiness between Natásha and Pierre, and the first thought of this filled her heart with gladness.

Book 15, Chapter 18

Pierre decides he wants Natásha for his wife. He can't propose to her right away, (apparently because she is still in mourning), but there are encouraging signs she'll say yes. Pierre is on top of the world as he leaves for a planned visit to Petersburg.

Summary:

When he got home Pierre spent a lot of time thinking of Prince Andrew, of Natásha, and of their love, and his feelings for her now. By six in the morning, he has realized he wants to marry Natásha. This realization made him very happy. He was so happy that everyone he met seemed different to him. He postponed a previously planned trip to Petersburg, and instead on the next two

days paid long visits to Mary's house to see Mary and Natásha. Finally, Pierre has a chance to speak with Mary alone, and he tells her of his wish to wed Natásha. Pierre can't ask Natasha right away because of her recent losses. But Mary seems to think Natásha will accept Pierre's proposal. Mary tells Pierre she will talk to Natásha about it, and that he should write her parents. In the meantime, Pierre should go ahead with his planned trip to Petersburg. The kind way Natásha says goodbye to him when he is leaving gives Pierre hope she will marry him, and he is extremely happy during his stay in Petersburg.

Quote from the chapter:

"Well," he went on with an evident effort at self-control and coherence. "I don't know when I began to love her, but I have loved her and her alone all my life, and I love her so that I cannot imagine life without her. I cannot propose to her at present, but the thought that perhaps she might someday be my wife and that I may be missing that possibility... that possibility... is terrible. Tell me, can I hope? Tell me what I am to do, dear princess!" he added after a pause, and touched her hand as she did not reply. "I am thinking of what you have told me," answered Princess Mary. "This is what I will say. You are right that to speak to her of love at present..." Princess Mary stopped. She was going to say that to speak of love was impossible, but she stopped because she had seen by the sudden change in Natásha two days before that she would not only not be hurt if Pierre spoke of his love, but that it was the very thing she wished for.

Book 15, Chapter 19

During this period, Pierre was almost insanely happy. The whole meaning of life now for him centered entirely on his love for Natasha and the hope of being loved by her.

Summary:

A joyful, unexpected happiness overtook Pierre and stayed with him. At times it seemed to him that his future happiness had become the center of the whole world. His sense of joy was that strong. He imagined over and over every conversation he had ever had with Natasha. He pictured in his mind her face and smile. This courtship was very different from his first courtship, when from the very beginning he had had serious doubts and reservations about Helene. With Natasha, there was not one shadow of a doubt in his mind. His only worry now was that it was all too good to be true. She was too good for him, he thought. He was afraid he would wake up one day and find it had only been a dream. He made no plans for the future and did not worry about small things. All that mattered to him now was the happiness before him if only he could attain it - that was all that mattered now. The bright new light in his soul caused him to see everyone he met as all good, and very, very worthy of being loved. He often surprised those he met by his significantly happy looks and smiles which seemed to express a secret understanding between him and them. And when he realized that people might not be aware of his happiness, he felt a desire somehow to explain to them that all that occupied them was a mere frivolous trifle unworthy of attention. Later in life, when Pierre looked back on this period, he realized the views he formed then, how he saw people and life, remained true for him always.

Quote from the chapter:

A joyful, unexpected frenzy, of which he had thought himself incapable, possessed him. The whole meaning of life—not for him alone but for the whole world—seemed to him centered in his love and the possibility of being loved by her. At times everybody seemed to him to be occupied with one thing only—his future happiness. Sometimes it seemed to him that other people were all as

pleased as he was himself and merely tried to hide that pleasure by pretending to be busy with other interests. In every word and gesture he saw allusions to his happiness. He often surprised those he met by his significantly happy looks and smiles which seemed to express a secret understanding between him and them. And when he realized that people might not be aware of his happiness, he pitied them with his whole heart and felt a desire somehow to explain to them that all that occupied them was a mere frivolous trifle unworthy of attention.

Book 15, Chapter 20

When she realizes Pierre wants to marry her, life and love seem to come back into Natasha's life. Natasha was happy again. She lost her fear of the future. Princess Mary is happy for her friend too, although she can't help but notice how quickly Natasha seems to have forgotten her brother.

Summary:

After Pierre's departure that first evening, something hidden and unknown to herself, but irrepressible, awoke in Natásha's soul. Everything: her face, walk, look, and voice, was suddenly altered. To her own surprise a power of life and hope of happiness rose to the surface and demanded satisfaction. From that evening she seemed to have forgotten everything that had happened to her. She no longer complained of her position, did not say a word about the past, and no longer feared to make optimistic plans for the future. And, whenever Princess Mary mentioned Pierre, Natasha smiled and a light came into her eyes. The change at first surprised Princess Mary; but when she understood its meaning it bothered her a little. "Can she have loved my brother so little as to be able to forget him so soon?" she thought. But Mary understood. Mary could see that Natásha had given herself over to this new feeling and that she couldn't conceal the fact that she was happy.

Quote from the chapter:

When Princess Mary returned to her room after her nocturnal talk with Pierre, Natásha met her on the threshold. "He has spoken? Yes? He has spoken?" she repeated. And a joyful yet pathetic expression which seemed to beg forgiveness for her joy settled on Natásha's face. "I wanted to listen at the door, but I knew you would tell me." Understandable and touching as the look with which Natásha gazed at her seemed to Princess Mary, and sorry as she was to see her agitation, these words pained her for a moment. She remembered her brother and his love. "But what's to be done? She can't help it," thought the princess. And with a sad and rather stern look she told Natásha all that Pierre had said.

First Epilogue Chapter 1

In this chapter, Tolstoy talks about why he thinks many people unfairly criticize Alexander's actions during the historical period known as the reaction. Tolstoy's basic argument here is that the critics shouldn't assume they would have made any better choices than Alexander did under the circumstances, especially since opinions about what should have been done at that time are always changing.

Summary:

In this point of the book, Tolstoy jumps ahead in time seven years from the year 1812 to the year 1819. Now, the focus of history has shifted from warfare moving across distances to stationary turmoil in the arenas of politics, law, diplomacy and treaties. Historians, he says, refer to this activity as the reaction, and they condemn any historical figures whose actions they think led more to reaction than to progress. Many historians condemn what certain political leaders of the reaction did. The chief culprit, they say, was Alexander, the same man who at the commencement of his reign they say was the chief cause of the liberal movement and the savior of Russia. Everyone today reproaches Alexander for one thing or another they believe he did wrong during this period of his reign, such as the Holy Alliance, the restoration of Poland, and the reaction of 1820 and later. It would take many pages just to list all the reproaches people now pour down upon Alexander's head. But Tolstoy points out that, at bottom, whenever anyone reproaches Alexander for something he did during the reaction, they are essentially just claiming that this or that action by Alexander was not the best thing for humanity in the long run. But, Tolstoy says, no one can really know any better than Alexander what would have been best for humanity in the long run. So, who can say whether any particular thing Alexander did or didn't do so long ago will in the long run turn out to have been a good or bad thing? And history works through competing voices, after all. If it were otherwise, if some one person could always dictate exactly how everything went or what tendency would always prevail in government, this would be just as though the lives of those in the opposition had never existed.

Quote from the chapter:

But even if we assume that fifty years ago Alexander I was mistaken in his view of what was good for the people, we must inevitably assume that the historian who judges Alexander will also after the lapse of some time turn out to be mistaken in his view of what is good for humanity. This assumption is all the more natural and inevitable because, watching the movement of history, we see that every year and with each new writer, opinion as to what is good for mankind changes; so that what once seemed good, ten years later seems bad, and vice versa. And what is more, we find at one and the same time quite contradictory views as to what is bad and what is good in history: some people regard giving a constitution to Poland and forming the Holy Alliance as praiseworthy in Alexander, while others regard it as blameworthy. The activity of Alexander or of Napoleon cannot be called useful or harmful, for it is impossible to say for what it was useful or harmful. If that activity displeases somebody, this is only because it does not agree with his limited understanding of what is good.

First Epilogue Chapter 2

Tolstoy explains another piece of his philosophy of history - that historians often err by treating chance or genius as causal forces in nature. Historical events, he says, must have specific real-world causes, although frequently these causes are many and the historian can't possibly know them all. Nonetheless, it's incorrect to write off millions of tiny real-world causes as merely chance or genius.

Summary:

Frequently historians attribute historical events to something called the great man theory of history. They say, for example, that the War of 1812 was caused by Napoleon, and that he was able to due this because of personal greatness. However, sometimes things happen historians can't possibly explain using their great man theory. When this happens, Tolstoy says, historians too often fall back on vague, conceptual causal forces like chance or genius. So, for example, a historian might say that the Russian

invasion at first succeeded because Napoleon was a great man, and then failed because his luck changed. Tolstoy says this is wrong. He says there is no such thing as a free-floating conceptual force in nature like chance shaping history. Everything that happens in the real world has real world causes - although there may be millions of these causes, far more than a historian can know about. A good way to think about this might be the example of boarding a bus. If I board a bus, the easiest way for me to explain why this group of people is together at that time is to say they are there by chance, as if this particular group of people is together on this particular bus at this particular time just due to chance. Obviously, though, that's not how it works! In reality, each person who is on the bus that day is there because of some actual causal chain of events which led that person to board that bus at that time. (For example, maybe I was on that bus that day because I forgot to check the radiator fluid on my car two weeks ago and it overheated and I am waiting for it to get repaired and my friend was going to give me a ride to work but her kid got sick and she couldn't take me and then I overslept, and etc., etc. etc.) But there is always going to be some chain of specific real world causal events that caused each person to be on that bus that day. To call it chance, is merely a convenient shorthand, good enough for most everyday purposes but not good enough for the serious historian. She needs to understand why things happened as they did, and to say it was mere chance just isnt good enough. It obscures true causes and thus limits the historian's ability to understand and analyze the data, and thus to really understand history.

Quote from the chapter:

Only by renouncing our claim to discern a purpose immediately intelligible to us, and admitting the ultimate purpose to be beyond our ken, may we discern the sequence of experiences in the lives of historic characters and perceive the cause of the effect they produce (incommensurable with ordinary human capabilities), and then the words chance and genius become superfluous. We need only confess that we do not know the purpose of the European convulsions and that we know only the facts—that is, the murders, first in France, then in Italy, in Africa, in Prussia, in Austria, in Spain, and in Russia—and that the movements from the west to the east and from the east to the west form the essence and purpose of these events, and not only shall we have no need to see exceptional ability and genius in Napoleon and Alexander, but we shall be unable to consider them to be anything but like other men, and we shall not be obliged to have recourse to chance for an explanation of those small events which made these people what they were, but it will be clear that all those small events were inevitable.

First Epilogue Chapter 3

It's said, the times make the man. In this chapter, Tolstoy describes how conditions existing at that time made a successful military invasion of Russia led by Napoleon possible, and how when conditions changed it all fell apart. Through it all, Napoleon was merely a pawn of history.

Summary:

In order for a military movement to rise up and successfully reach Moscow, a number of chance conditions had to be in place beforehand. It so happened that at the time conditions were perfect for a Napoleon to rise up and lead this invasion. It wasn't necessary that the person in charge be Napoleon Bonaparte himself, only that it be someone like him. Napoleon was only one cog in the larger machine, and someone else of similar character would have done just as well. And having such a person to play the part of leader was only one of many chance conditions that needed to be in place in order for this unlikely military venture to come off. Tolstoy lists dozens of other chance

circumstances which were also required for this enterprise to work as well as it did. For example, another necessary condition for a successful invasion of Russia was that a larger than traditional army needed to be assembled, and that it be one not subject to time-honored military customs and mores. This particular condition, was newly made possible by the French Revolution. Then, at the end of the chapter, Tolstoy goes on to describe how changing conditions resulted in the downfall of the invading French army.

Quote from the chapter:

The invasion pushes eastward and reaches its final goal—Moscow. That city is taken; the Russian army suffers heavier losses than the opposing armies had suffered in the former war from Austerlitz to Wagram. But suddenly instead of those chances and that genius which hitherto had so consistently led him by an uninterrupted series of successes to the predestined goal, an innumerable sequence of inverse chances occur—from the cold in his head at Borodinó to the sparks which set Moscow on fire, and the frosts—and instead of genius, stupidity and immeasurable baseness become evident. The invaders flee, turn back, flee again, and all the chances are now not for Napoleon but always against him. A countermovement is then accomplished from east to west with a remarkable resemblance to the preceding movement from west to east. Attempted drives from east to west—similar to the contrary movements of 1805, 1807, and 1809—precede the great westward movement; there is the same coalescence into a group of enormous dimensions; the same adhesion of the people of Central Europe to the movement; the same hesitation midway, and the same increasing rapidity as the goal is approached.

First Epilogue Chapter 4

In this chapter Tolstoy briefly describes Napoleon's and Alexander's final careers after the war of 1815. And he tells us the ultimate purpose of history is beyond human comprehension.

Summary:

In this chapter, Tolstoy briefly updates us on what happened in the careers of Napoleon and Alexander after the military actions have ended. Napoleon, who long ago was chosen by history to star in the great drama, is asked to appear in several more scenes before he is discarded by history and exiled to the island of St. Helena. So, this man who had devastated France returns to France alone, without any conspiracy and without soldiers. Any guard might arrest him, but by strange chance no one does so and all rapturously greet the man they cursed the day before and will curse again a month later. History still needs Napoleon to appear on the stage to justify the final collective act. That act is performed. The last role is played. Napoleon the actor is bidden to disrobe and wash off his powder and paint: he will not be wanted any more. Tolstoy then turns to the end of Alexander's career. He tells us that Alexander, having fulfilled his mission and feeling the hand of God upon him, suddenly recognizes the insignificance of that supposed power, turns away from it, and gives it into the hands of contemptible men. So what was the purpose of all of this, he asks. Tolstoy, using the analogy of understanding a bee hive, tells us that although we can observe manifestations of life in it's historic characters and nations, understanding life's ultimate purpose is beyond our human comprehension.

Quote from the chapter:

A bee settling on a flower has stung a child. And the child is afraid of bees and declares that bees exist to sting people. A poet admires the bee sucking from the chalice of a flower and says it exists

to suck the fragrance of flowers. A beekeeper, seeing the bee collect pollen from flowers and carry it to the hive, says that it exists to gather honey. Another beekeeper who has studied the life of the hive more closely says that the bee gathers pollen dust to feed the young bees and rear a queen, and that it exists to perpetuate its race. A botanist notices that the bee flying with the pollen of a male flower to a pistil fertilizes the latter, and sees in this the purpose of the bee's existence. Another, observing the migration of plants, notices that the bee helps in this work, and may say that in this lies the purpose of the bee. But the ultimate purpose of the bee is not exhausted by the first, the second, or any of the processes the human mind can discern. The higher the human intellect rises in the discovery of these purposes, the more obvious it becomes, that the ultimate purpose is beyond our comprehension. All that is accessible to man is the relation of the life of the bee to other manifestations of life. And so it is with the purpose of historic characters and nations.

First Epilogue Chapter 5

In the Rostov family, Natasha has married Pierre. The old Count has died. Nicholas struggles to pay off his late father's impossibly large debts, while trying to preserve as best he can a few small comforts for his grieving mother. Sonya is still living with the family and doing what she can to help out, but she and Nicholas are no longer close. Nicholas struggles and suffers under the tremendous burden of his father's debts.

Summary:

Natásha's wedding to Bezúkhov, which took place in 1813, was the last happy event in the Rostóv family. Count Ilyá Rostóv died that same year and, as always happens, after the father's death the family group broke up. Before his death, the old Count had been beaten down by the many successive tragedies the family had had to endure. After Natásha's marriage the old Count's illness and depression completely overcame him. Before dying, he apologized to his family for leading them to financial ruin. Still, everyone who had known the old Count remembered him with great respect. Nicholas, returning from the army to sort out his father's affairs, decided to assume the debts out of respect for his father's memory. The creditors began to pressure Nicholas for payment, and the family's financial situation seemed hopeless. Nicholas was allowed no respite and no peace. The family estate sold for half its value. Nicholas, the Countess and Sonya moved into a small rented house. Nicholas borrowed some money from Pierre to pay off the most pressing debts, but the remaining debts remained an unbearable burden. At the same time, Nicholas tried his best to maintain his debilitated mother in comfort insofar as possible, which meant additional expense to buy some small luxuries for her. Sonya remained with the family, and while she was a help in some ways, her former affinity with Nicholas was a thing of the past. Natásha and Pierre were living in Petersburg at the time and had no clear idea of Nicholas' circumstances, which indeed Nicholas always endeavored to conceal from the world. Nicholas' position became worse and worse. The idea of putting something aside out of his salary proved a dream. The thought of marrying some rich woman as a way out of his financial difficulties was repugnant to him. A gloomy mood hung constantly over Nicholas.

Quote from the chapter:

Nicholas' position became worse and worse. The idea of putting something aside out of his salary proved a dream. Not only did he not save anything, but to comply with his mother's demands he even incurred some small debts. He could see no way out of this situation. The idea of marrying some rich woman, which was suggested to him by his female relations, was repugnant to him. The

other way out—his mother's death—never entered his head. He wished for nothing and hoped for nothing, and deep in his heart experienced a gloomy and stern satisfaction in an uncomplaining endurance of his position. He tried to avoid his old acquaintances with their commiseration and offensive offers of assistance; he avoided all distraction and recreation, and even at home did nothing but play cards with his mother, pace silently up and down the room, and smoke one pipe after another. He seemed carefully to cherish within himself the gloomy mood which alone enabled him to endure his position.

First Epilogue Chapter 6

His family's straitened circumstances cause Nicholas to take a very cold and aloof tone with Princess Mary. But, when he sees how sad this makes Mary, he apologizes and the two reestablish their former closeness.

Summary:

Princess Mary moves to Moscow. . From reports current in town she learned how the Rostóvs were situated, and how "the son has sacrificed himself for his mother", which Mary thinks admirable. After several weeks she pays a visit to the Rostov house. Nicholas' tone to Mary is cold and aloof. At the repeated urging of Countess Rostov, several weeks later Nicholas pays a return call to the princess. Again, his manner towards her is cold. After a very short visit, he gets up to leave. She begins to weep, saying she is very sad at losing his friendship. She cannot understand why he is treating her so coldly. Then she realized the cause. The poverty now facing his family as made Nicholas self-conscious. Mary, who is very saddened by his new attitude toward her, tells Nicholas she has had little joy in her life and that she will very much regret losing his friendship. She begins to cry and rush out of the room, but he stops her.. Looking into each other"s eyes, their former closeness seems reestablished.

Quote from the chapter:

And remembering his former tenderness, and looking now at his kind, sorrowful face, she suddenly understood the cause of his coldness. "But why, Count, why?" she almost cried, unconsciously moving closer to him. "Why? Tell me. You must tell me!" He was silent. "I don't understand your why, Count," she continued, "but it's hard for me... I confess it. For some reason you wish to deprive me of our former friendship. And that hurts me." There were tears in her eyes and in her voice. "I have had so little happiness in life that every loss is hard for me to bear.... Excuse me, good-by!" and suddenly she began to cry and was hurrying from the room. "Princess, for God's sake!" he exclaimed, trying to stop her. "Princess!" She turned round. For a few seconds they gazed silently into one another's eyes—and what had seemed impossible and remote suddenly became possible, inevitable, and very near.

First Epilogue Chapter 7

Nicholas marries Princess Mary and they move to Bald Hills with the Countess and Sonya. Nicholas becomes an enthusiastic farmer who has good relations with his serfs. They pay off their debts and the family prospers.

Summary:

In the winter of 1813 Nicholas married Princess Mary and moved to Bald Hills with his wife, his mother, and Sónya. They prosper. Within seven years Nicholas has paid off all of the Rostov debts without selling any of his wife's property. He begins to purchase additional land, and is negotiating to buy back the Rostóvs' former house at Otrádnoe. Nicholas has become avidly involved in farming. Having started farming from necessity, he soon grew so devoted to it that it became his favorite and almost his sole occupation. His success as a farmer seems due to his ability to work well with the peasants on the estate. He respects their knowledge of farming and tries to learn from them. He treats them well but does not coddle them. He was as careful of the sowing and reaping of the peasants' hay and corn as of his own, and few landowners had their crops sown and harvested so early and so well, or got so good a return, as did Nicholas. He increased the number of cattle the peasants had and kept the peasant families together. But he worked to expel peasants who were lazy, depraved, and the weak. He loved the Russian peasants and their way of life. He had faith in their methods of farming, and was fair to them. But he was not a do gooder. He merely believed that "if the peasant is naked and hungry and has only one miserable horse, he can do no good either for himself or for me." He refused to allow himself to think that he was doing good to others for virtue's sake. The peasants came to regard Nicholas as a very good master.

Quote from the chapter:

Having started farming from necessity, he soon grew so devoted to it that it became his favorite and almost his sole occupation. Nicholas was a plain farmer: he did not like innovations, especially the English ones then coming into vogue. He laughed at theoretical treatises on estate management, disliked factories, the raising of expensive products, and the buying of expensive seed corn, and did not make a hobby of any particular part of the work on his estate. He always had before his mind's eye the estate as a whole and not any particular part of it. The chief thing in his eyes was not the nitrogen in the soil, nor the oxygen in the air, nor manures, nor special plows, but that most important agent by which nitrogen, oxygen, manure, and plow were made effective—the peasant laborer. When Nicholas first began farming and began to understand its different branches, it was the serf who especially attracted his attention. The peasant seemed to him not merely a tool, but also a judge of farming and an end in himself. At first he watched the serfs, trying to understand their aims and what they considered good and bad, and only pretended to direct them and give orders while in reality learning from them their methods, their manner of speech, and their judgment of what was good and bad. Only when he had understood the peasants' tastes and aspirations, had learned to talk their language, to grasp the hidden meaning of their words, and felt akin to them did he begin boldly to manage his serfs, that is, to perform toward them the duties demanded of him. And Nicholas' management produced very brilliant results.

First Epilogue Chapter 8

Mary's influence helps Nicholas realize it's wrong to beat the peasants. Socializing little with the local gentry, Nicholas hunts, and reads in Winters. Sonya settles into a helper role in the household, perhaps reflecting a personality defect. Natasha opines that (Sonya) is a sterile flower, you know. Occasionally, many people visit Bald Hills and stay in a restored dwelling.

Summary:

In this chapter, Tolstoy tells us more about ongoing life at Bald Hills. Noticing Mary's reactions, Nicholas comes to realize it's very wrong to use his fists on the peasants, which he does when he

grows angry with them. He can tell this bothers Mary a lot, although she says nothing about it when it happens. Nicholas vows to stop striking the peasants. With Mary's help, he manages to break himself of this cruel habit. Nicholas socializes little with the neighboring gentry. During the Winters Nicholas immerses himself in family life with the children, reads a great deal, and hunts. Sometimes he takes long hunting trips. Mary initially feels somewhat uncomfortable knowing Nicholas at one time planned to marry Sonya. Sonya has settled into a mere helper role at Bald Hills and seems satisfied with this life, not seeming to wish for more of a life of her own. However, they come to believe Sonya's willingness to accept this reflects something like a flaw in Sonya's personality, such as perhaps a lack of egotism. Finally, Tolstoy tells us that they have restored the old county seat at Bald Hills, a large house furnished rustically. At times, they receive a lot of visitors at Bald Hills, or smaller groups will come and stay for a long time.

Quote from the chapter:

(Mary) thoroughly realized the wrong (NIcholas) had done Sónya, felt herself to blame toward her, and imagined that her wealth had influenced Nicholas' choice. She could not find fault with Sónya in any way and tried to be fond of her, but often felt ill-will toward her which she could not overcome. Once she had a talk with her friend Natásha about Sónya and about her own injustice toward her. "You know," said Natásha, "you have read the Gospels a great deal—there is a passage in them that just fits Sónya." "What?" asked Countess Mary, surprised. "'To him that hath shall be given, and from him that hath not shall be taken away.' You remember? She is one that hath not; why, I don't know. Perhaps she lacks egotism, I don't know, but from her is taken away, and everything has been taken away. Sometimes I am dreadfully sorry for her. Formerly I very much wanted Nicholas to marry her, but I always had a sort of presentiment that it would not come off. She is a sterile flower, you know—like some strawberry blossoms. Sometimes I am sorry for her, and sometimes I think she doesn't feel it as you or I would."

First Epilogue Chapter 9

One day at Bald Hills, during one of her pregnancies, Nicholas seems cross and Mary worries he is mad at her. But later, play with their young daughter Natasha restores awareness of a sense of the joy of life between them. Mary wonders that she could be so happy, and yet she senses there is another sort of happiness unattainable in this life that awaits her in the next.

Summary:

One busy day at Bald Hills, when 20 people are seated at the dining table, Mary notices that Nicholas seems a little cross with her. It is December 5, 1820, the eve of Nicholas' saint day, and the now retired General Denisov and Natasha are visiting. Pierre is expected any minute, and there will be many more guests and well-wishers the next day. Mary does not ask Nicholas what is bothering him, but she wonders what it could be. Normally they were a very happy couple, but occasionally, after they had been happiest together, they suddenly had a feeling of estrangement and hostility, which occurred most frequently during Mary's pregnancies, as she was now. She asks him after dinner why he is angry with her, but he denies it. He complains of being tired and busy, and goes to take a nap on a sofa. Mary thinks he finds her repulsive, especially when she is pregnant. She became a bit irritated with everyone in the house. Later, she goes to speak with Nicholas, but finds him still asleep. When a child accidently wakes Nicholas, Mary worries he will be angry. They have a little talk and Nicholas tries to tell Mary that his feeling for her is that she is a part of him and he could never live without her. Nicholas plays a bit with their daughter Natasha,

their mutual sense of domestic happiness restored. Mary senses that this is just a foreshadowing of the happiness that awaits them in the life to come.

Quote from the chapter:

I don't know why you think I am cross," said Nicholas, replying to the question he knew was in his wife's mind. "You have no idea how unhappy, how lonely, I feel when you are like that. It always seems to me..." "Mary, don't talk nonsense. You ought to be ashamed of yourself!" he said gaily. "It seems to be that you can't love me, that I am so plain... always... and now... in this cond..." "Oh, how absurd you are! It is not beauty that endears, it's love that makes us see beauty. It is only Malvínas and women of that kind who are loved for their beauty. But do I love my wife? I don't love her, but... I don't know how to put it. Without you, or when something comes between us like this, I seem lost and can't do anything. Now do I love my finger? I don't love it, but just try to cut it off!"

First Epilogue Chapter 10

This chapter describes the married Natasha. (Perhaps she represents to Tolstoy the ideal Russian wife.) By 1820, she has four children. The changes in Natasha were profound. The entire focus of her life has changed. She seemed, on the surface, like a different person.

Summary:

Natasha had a different life now. In 1820, Natásha and Pierre had already had three little girls and a baby boy. She had grown robust, stouter and broader, no longer the lively and slim Natásha of former days. Her former animation, that used to charm everyone, was gone. Now her face and body were often all that one saw. Her soul was not visible at all. All that struck the eye was a strong, handsome, and fertile woman, handsome, with a fully developed body she was more handsome than ever, but in a new way. Since marriage, Natasha was rarely seen in society. Her pregnancies, her confinements, nursing of her children, and sharing her husband's life, left her little time for society, although she always loved being with her relatives. She rarely sang now, having abandoned all her witchery, of which her singing had been an unusually powerful part, and what had most charmed the people she met. She was much less careful about her manners, speech, and her looks. She let herself go, wasn't careful about her clothes or hair, chose her words poorly, and indulged in petty jealousy—she was jealous of Sónya, of the governess, and of every woman, pretty or plain— these were all habitual subjects of jest to those about her. The general opinion was that Pierre was under his wife's thumb, which was actually true. Ever since she married, Natásha had only to state her wishes and Pierre submitted to them. On the other hand, Natásha did her best to do things just as Pierre wished. She and Countess Mary seldom mentioned Andrew to her husband, who she imagined was jealous of his memory. In short, the changes in Natasha were extraordinary. Countess Rostov thought Natasha was now living the exact life she was born for. The Countess had always known that Natásha would make an exemplary wife and mother.

Quote from the chapter:

The subject which wholly engrossed Natásha's attention was her family: that is, her husband whom she had to keep so that he should belong entirely to her and to the home, and the children whom she had to bear, bring into the world, nurse, and bring up. And the deeper she penetrated, not with her mind only but with her whole soul, her whole being, into the subject that absorbed her, the larger did that subject grow and the weaker and more inadequate did her powers appear, so that she concentrated them wholly on that one thing and yet was unable to accomplish all that

she considered necessary. There were then as now conversations and discussions about women's rights, the relations of husband and wife and their freedom and rights, though these themes were not yet termed questions as they are now; but these topics were not merely uninteresting to Natásha, she positively did not understand them.

First Epilogue Chapter 11

Pierre returns two weeks late from a month-long business trip to Petersburg. Natásha is vexed with him and chides him for being late, but doesn't appear to be seriously angry. Pierre, apologetic, explains that the delay was completely unavoidable. Soon the two are happily looking in on their baby Pétya, who was ill while Pierre was away but is now better.

Summary:

Pierre was called to Petersburg on some business for a society which he helped found. Natásha had given him a four weeks' leave of absence from Bald Hills for this purpose, but the work ended up taking a full six weeks. After his four-week leave expired, Natásha was in a constant state of alarm, depression, and irritability. While he was gone, Natásha took comfort in being with their little baby Pétya. But she accidently overfed him and he became a little ill. The baby recovered before Pierre came home, though. When Pierre did return, Natásha was happy but also let him know in no uncertain terms that she was quite vexed with him for being so late. "I wonder you're not ashamed!, she told him, If only you could see what I was like without you, how I suffered! Pierre wanted to smile but dared not even think of doing so. He made a piteous, frightened face and bent down. Natásha, though, does not seem seriously angry with Pierre, and soon the two are joyfully looking in on the little baby.

Quote from the chapter:

"Come, come!" she said, not letting go of his arm. And they went to their rooms. When Nicholas and his wife came to look for Pierre he was in the nursery holding his baby son, who was again awake, on his huge right palm and dandling him. A blissful bright smile was fixed on the baby's broad face with its toothless open mouth. The storm was long since over and there was bright, joyous sunshine on Natásha's face as she gazed tenderly at her husband and child.

First Epilogue, Chapter 12

To illustrate one aspect of how households function, Tolstoy describes how different persons at Bald Hills uniquely experienced Pierre's return from his long business trip to Petersburg. He shows that everyone in the household experiences events from their own perspective. Pierre has returned with many gifts and purchases, and his return enlivens the whole household. But, his return effects each individual in the household slightly differently.

Summary:

In this chapter, Tolstoy describes how every large household such as Bald Hills is actually a composition of many smaller distinct worlds merged into a harmonious whole. While coexisting, each retains its own peculiarities. He demonstrates this by showing how different people within the Bald Hills household experienced the return of Pierre from his long business trip to Petersburg

differently. Tolstoy tells us that, for each group, Pierre's return meant something different. He talks about the differnt people in the house, such as the servants, the children, their governesses, Andrew's son Nicholas, the household guests, Natásha, the old countess and her companion Belóva, the other grown-up members of the family, and the old ladies. Pierre's return was a joyful and important event and they all felt it to be so. But each element of the household had its own special reasons to rejoice or grieve over that occurrence independently of the others. For example, the servants knew that Count Nicholas would be in better spirits and temper now, and also that they would all now receive handsome presents for the holidays. The children and their governesses were glad of Pierre's return because no one else drew them into the social life of the household as he did. And Young Nicholas, Prince Andrew's son, who is now a slim lad of fifteen, was delighted because Uncle Pierre as he called him was the object of his rapturous and passionate affection. Natásha thought the gifts Pierre were a bit too costly. But, although there were additional expenses, Pierre had noticed to his surprise that he spent only half as much as before, and that his affairs—which had been in disorder of late, chiefly because of his first wife's debts—had begun to improve.

Quote from the chapter:

Though the most absent-minded and forgetful of men, Pierre, with the aid of a list his wife drew up, had now bought everything, not forgetting his mother—and brother-in-law's commissions, nor the dress material for a present to Belóva, nor toys for his wife's nephews. In the early days of his marriage it had seemed strange to him that his wife should expect him not to forget to procure all the things he undertook to buy, and he had been taken aback by her serious annoyance when on his first trip he forgot everything. But in time he grew used to this demand. Knowing that Natásha asked nothing for herself, and gave him commissions for others only when he himself had offered to undertake them, he now found an unexpected and childlike pleasure in this purchase of presents for everyone in the house, and never forgot anything. If he now incurred Natásha's censure it was only for buying too many and too expensive things. To her other defects (as most people thought them, but which to Pierre were qualities) of untidiness and neglect of herself, she now added stinginess.

First Epilogue, Chapter 13

Pierre gives Countess Rostov her gifts from Petersburg. Everyone wants to hear the current political news from Pierre. However, since the old Countess' social understanding is in decline, the group can only make small talk on other subjects the Countess will find agreeable.

Summary:

Pierre and Natasha go into the drawing room to give Countess Rostov her gifts from Petersburg. Since losing her son and husband, the old Countess' social skills have slipped quite a bit, and she isn't quite able to properly show her appreciation for the gifts and in seeing Pierre. Later the whole household has tea, with Sonya presiding beside the samovar. While in Petersburg, Pierre has learned a lot about the current political situation there. Pierre, Natasha, Nicholas, Countess Mary, and Denisov had a lot to hear about, but these were things they could not discuss with the old countess. She would have had difficulty keeping up with a conversation on current events. So, instead, their conversation is limited to uninteresting small talk about subjects the old Countess will find agreeable. Pierre and the others enjoy the childrens' presence.

Quote from the chapter:

Though Pierre, Natasha, Nicholas, Countess Mary, and Denisov had much to talk about that they could not discuss before the old countess- not that anything was hidden from her, but because she

had dropped so far behindhand in many things that had they begun to converse in her presence they would have had to answer inopportune questions and to repeat what they had already told her many times: that so-and-so was dead and so-and-so was married, which she would again be unable to remember- yet they sat at tea round the samovar in the drawing room from habit, and Pierre answered the countess' questions as to whether Prince Vasili had aged and whether Countess Mary Alexeevna had sent greetings and still thought of them, and other matters that interested no one and to which she herself was indifferent. Conversation of this kind, interesting to no one yet unavoidable, continued all through teatime. All the grown-up members of the family were assembled near the round tea table at which Sonya presided beside the samovar. The children with their tutors and governesses had had tea and their voices were audible from the next room.

First Epilogue, Chapter 14

The conversation turns to the current Russian political situation. Pierre thinks things are going very badly and that something may need to be done to directly oppose the current drift of the government. Nicholas is firmly opposed to that notion. The young Nicholas, Andrew's son, listens in.

Summary:

After tea people begin to leave the drawing room, but the younger Nicholas remained to listen to the adults. The conversation settles in on the contemporary politics. The older Nicholas asked Pierre a lot of questions about everything that was going on in Petersburg. Denisov, dissatisfied with the government on account of his own disappointments in the service, found fault with everything. Then the men go into the study to continue discussing the political state of affairs, and little Nicholas follows them unnoticed. Things are going very badly, Pierre believes, and something will need to be done in opposition to the government. Pierre believes the Emperor is failing and some sort of intervention may be needed. Nicholas is firmly of the opposite opinion, and says he would take up arms against Pierre to prevent an overthrow of the government, if it came to that. Natasha said something which helped dispel the hostile tone of Nicholas' last remark, and the conversation wrapped up. Afterwards, Pierre was surprised at how interested the young Nicholas was in all of this.

Quote from the chapter:

Nicholas, who had left his nephew, irritably pushed up an armchair, sat down in it, and listened to Pierre, coughing discontentedly and frowning more and more. But action with what aim? he cried. And what position will you adopt toward the government? Why, the position of assistants. The society need not be secret if the government allows it. Not merely is it not hostile to government, but it is a society of true conservatives- a society of gentlemen in the full meaning of that word. It is only to prevent some Pugachev or other from killing my children and yours, and Arakcheev from sending me off to some Military Settlement. We join hands only for the public welfare and the general safety. Yes, but it's a secret society and therefore a hostile and harmful one which can only cause harm.

First Epilogue, Chapter 15

They have a pleasant supper, reminiscing about the events of 1812. In the evening, Nicholas learns Mary is keeping a diary. He is impressed by her great goodness. They talk about the day and the children.

Summary:

The conversation at supper was not about politics or societies, but turned on the subject Nicholas liked best- recollections of 1812. That evening, Nicholas learns that Mary has been keeping a diary. Nicholas read a little of it, and reflected on how proud he was of his wife's intelligence and goodness, of her untiring, continual spiritual effort of which the sole aim was the children's moral welfare. Nicholas told her he regretted having become angry with Pierre earlier about his government opposition. Mary says Pierre may be correct that everybody is suffering, tortured, and being corrupted, and that it is our duty to help our neighbor, but that they have a higher duty not to expose themselves and the children to dangerous risks. This brings up little Nicholas. Nicholas said he hoped he would be able to leave all of the children in an excellent financial position. Mary thought, but did not say, that perhaps Nicholas worried too much about money. Nicholas hopes to soon repurchase Otradnoe. Mary wasn't able to enter into Nicholas' financial worries, but she felt a submissive tender love for this man who would never understand all that she understood, and this seemed to make her love for him still stronger. She hoped she loved little Nicholas as well as her own children, and all her family as well as Christ loved mankind. When they were through talking, Nicholas went to pray to the icons.

Quote from the chapter:

Perhaps it need not be done so pedantically, thought Nicholas, or even done at all, but this untiring, continual spiritual effort of which the sole aim was the children's moral welfare delighted him. Had Nicholas been able to analyze his feelings he would have found that his steady, tender, and proud love of his wife rested on his feeling of wonder at her spirituality and at the lofty moral world, almost beyond his reach, in which she had her being. He was proud of her intelligence and goodness, recognized his own insignificance beside her in the spiritual world, and rejoiced all the more that she with such a soul not only belonged to him but was part of himself. "I quite, quite approve, my dearest!" said he with a significant look, and after a short pause he added: "And I behaved badly today. You weren't in the study. We began disputing—Pierre and I—and I lost my temper. But he is impossible: such a child!

First Epilogue, Chapter 16

In the evening, Pierre and Natasha enjoy a conversation. These two by now understand each other so well that they can discuss various topics simultaneously, in a nonlinear manner, and each understand perfectly the other's thoughts. Also, that night young Nicholas has a powerful dream in which his father Prince Andrew visits him and approves of his son.

Summary:

Natasha and Pierre, left alone, also began to talk as only a husband and wife can talk, that is, with extraordinary clearness and rapidity, understanding and expressing each other's thoughts in ways contrary to all rules of logic, without premises, deductions, or conclusions, and in a quite peculiar way. This simultaneous discussion of many topics did not prevent a clear understanding but on the contrary was the surest sign that they fully understood one another. That night they talked about

many things - they had missed each other when Pierre was away, what a good person Mary is, Pierre's conflict with Nicholas over opposing the government, Nicholas himself, Platon Karataev, and their love and family life and other things. Later that night, Little Nicholas dreamed that he and Uncle Pierre were leading a huge army. In the dream, Little Nicholas turned to look at Pierre but Pierre was no longer there. In his place was his father- Prince Andrew. His father caressed and pitied him. My father! he thought. My father has been with me and caressed me. He approved of me and of Uncle Pierre, thought the boy upon awakening.

Quote from the chapter:

Now who could decide whether he is really cleverer than all the others? she asked herself, and passed in review all those whom Pierre most respected. Judging by what he had said there was no one he had respected so highly as Platon Karataev. Do you know what I am thinking about? she asked. About Platon Karataev. Would he have approved of you now, do you think? Pierre was not at all surprised at this question. He understood his wife's line of thought. Platon Karataev? he repeated, and pondered, evidently sincerely trying to imagine Karataev's opinion on the subject. He would not have understood... yet perhaps he would. I love you awfully! Natasha suddenly said. Awfully, awfully! No, he would not have approved, said Pierre, after reflection. What he would have approved of is our family life. He was always so anxious to find seemliness, happiness, and peace in everything, and I should have been proud to let him see us.

Second Epilogue, concept note 1

Paradigm shift in how we view history.

Summary:

An important underlying thesis of the second epilogue is that we are currently in the midst of what we today would call a paradigm shift in how we view history. Tolstoy does not use the term paradigm shift, of course, since that term was invented much later. But if you read the last chapter of this epilogue, it's pretty clear he is talking about what we today would call a paradigm shift. It's a profound change between two very different ways of looking at something. Tolstoy says the change taking place in the views of history is tantamount to the Copernican shift between the old view that the sun orbits the earth to our understanding that the earth orbits the sun. Note: In this set of notes, the key concepts from the second epilogue have been reordered in the interest of making the main ideas clearer. You can read more about this paradigm shift in understanding history in Chapter 12 of the second epilogue.

Quote from the epilogue:

And yet the former history continues to be studied side by side with the laws of statistics, geography, political economy, comparative philology, and geology, which directly contradict its assumptions. The struggle between the old views and the new was long and stubbornly fought out in physical philosophy. Theology stood on guard for the old views and accused the new of violating revelation. But when truth conquered, theology established itself just as firmly on the new foundation. Just as prolonged and stubborn is the struggle now proceeding between the old and the new conception of history, and theology in the same way stands on guard for the old view, and accuses the new view of subverting revelation.

Second Epilogue, concept note 2

Historical events are caused by the activity of all the participants.

Summary:

The new history paradigm says that the movement of nations is caused by the activity of all the people who participate in historical events, and who always combine in such a way that those taking the largest direct share in the event take on themselves the least responsibility and vice versa. Tolstoy arrives at this conclusion by first ruling out a number of misconceptions within the old view of history. Some of the other possible causes for history that he first rules out are (1) Divine intervention, (2) the influence of great men, (3) abstract concepts such as justice, (4) the free will of the participants, (5) chance, and (6) power. He explains how the old paradigm is wrong in thinking any of these are causing history. But in Chapter 7 of this epilogue, he tells us the new view of what causes history. It is, he says, by the activity of all the people who participate in the events. Understanding this, as he says elsewhere, will help us discover and describe the laws of history. Although it's far beyond the scope of War and Peace, it's interesting to think about how modern technology, such as advances in data analysis, may empower historians to better view history through this new paradigm, and in ways Tolstoy could never have dreamed of.

Quote from the epilogue:

Arriving at this conclusion we can reply directly and positively to these two essential questions of history: (1) What is power? (2) What force produces the movement of the nations? (1) Power is the relation of a given person to other individuals, in which the more this person expresses opinions, predictions, and justifications of the collective action that is performed, the less is his participation in that action. (2) The movement of nations is caused not by power, nor by intellectual activity, nor even by a combination of the two as historians have supposed, but by the activity of all the people who participate in the events, and who always combine in such a way that those taking the largest direct share in the event take on themselves the least responsibility and vice versa.

Second Epilogue, concept note 3

The central problem facing historians is the discovery of the laws which govern history.

Summary:

A major idea Tolstoy is working up to in this epilogue, as stated in Chapter 11, is that “To discover and define those laws is the problem of history.” In place of the word laws we might substitute the word relationships. Extending this, we might say that historical events are caused by the relationships which govern the activity of all of the people who participate in historical events. Part of being able to see history in this way involves realizing that, for the historian, the effect of the individual free will of each participant in historical events is negligible. It's true that the individual participant may feel her actions are the result of her free will, just as she feels that the earth is not moving around the sum. But just as planetary motion is governed by laws, so too are all the actions of participants in historical events in a certain sense inevitable in a given situation. Although he does not say this, Tolstoy seems to imply that the discovery of the laws which govern history could prevent incalculable human suffering. The War of 1812, for example, produced

immense human suffering. A better understanding of history might have prevented this. Again, though, Tolstoy did not actually say this. It is merely one possible interpretation of his thinking.

Quote from the epilogue:

To discover and define those laws is the problem of history. From the standpoint from which the science of history now regards its subject on the path it now follows, seeking the causes of events in man's free will, a scientific enunciation of those laws is impossible, for however man's free will may be restricted, as soon as we recognize it as a force not subject to law, the existence of law becomes impossible. Only by reducing this element of free will to the infinitesimal, that is, by regarding it as an infinitely small quantity, can we convince ourselves of the absolute inaccessibility of the causes, and then instead of seeking causes, history will take the discovery of laws as its problem.

Second Epilogue, concept note 4

What is history?

Summary:

History is the life of nations and of humanity. It is how we know oursleves. History, therefore, is more than just knowing what happened in terms of the external events. It involves a deeper understanding of what caused those events, and the meaning of those events. Tolstoy touches on this point in Chapter 1 of this epilogue and elsewhere.

Quote from the epilogue:

What does all this mean? Why did it happen? What made those people burn houses and slay their fellow men? What were the causes of these events? What force made men act so? These are the instinctive, plain, and most legitimate questions humanity asks itself when it encounters the monuments and tradition of that period. For a reply to these questions the common sense of mankind turns to the science of history, whose aim is to enable nations and humanity to know themselves.

Second Epilogue, concept note 5

What types of historians are there?

Summary:

Tolstoy discusses five types in all. These five types are (1) the ancient historians, (2) the modern specific historians, (3) the modern universal historians, (4) the modern cultural historians, and (5) the new historians, i.e. those who see history through a new paradigm. He discusses these five types in chapter 2 of this epilogue. As mentioned elsewhere, Tolstoy saw a paradigm shift taking place within history.

This is a shift between the new view of history and the old view. In this epilogue, he divides the old paradigm into two periods chronologically. So, under the old paradigm, we have ancient and modern views of history. Tolstoy goes on to divide the modern views of history into three types. The first group of modern historians are the specialist historians. These are the biographical

historians and historians of separate nations, who narrate events as occurring solely by the will of a Napoleon, and Alexander, or in general by the persons they describe. The second group of modern historians Tolstoy discusses are the universal historians. Writers of universal histories, Tolstoy tells us, deal with all the nations and seem to recognize how erroneous is the specialist historians' view of the force which produces events. They do not recognize history as caused by a power inherent in heroes and rulers, but as the resultant of a multiplicity of variously directed forces. A third class of modern historians—the so-called historians of culture—following the path laid down by the universal historians who sometimes accept writers and ladies as forces producing events—again take that force to be something quite different. They see it in what is called culture—in mental activity such as important books. So, that makes five types in all. He discusses these five types in chapter 4 of this epilogue.

Quote from the epilogue:

Writers of universal history who deal with all the nations seem to recognize how erroneous is the specialist historians' view of the force which produces events. They do not recognize it as a power inherent in heroes and rulers, but as the resultant of a multiplicity of variously directed forces. In describing a war or the subjugation of a people, a general historian looks for the cause of the event not in the power of one man, but in the interaction of many persons connected with the event. ... A third class of historians—the so-called historians of culture—following the path laid down by the universal historians who sometimes accept writers and ladies as forces producing events—again take that force to be something quite different. They see it in what is called culture—in mental activity.

Second Epilogue, concept note 6

How did the Ancients view history?

Summary:

Ancient historians believed God or the Gods actively direct the course of history, in a supernatural way. The ancient histories also believed that certain events were predestined to happen by the will of the Gods. Sometimes, they thought, the Gods would control history by directly helping a hero or hindering a foe. Today, of course, these ideas have fallen out of use.

Quote from the epilogue:

The question: how did individuals make nations act as they wished and by what was the will of these individuals themselves guided? the ancients met by recognizing a divinity which subjected the nations to the will of a chosen man, and guided the will of that chosen man so as to accomplish ends that were predestined. For the ancients these questions were solved by a belief in the direct participation of the Deity in human affairs. Modern history, in theory, rejects both these principles.

Second Epilogue, concept note 7

The great man theory of history

Summary:

The great man theory is a faulty notion of history common in the old paradigm which one often finds in modern histories. Under this theory, for example, one might erroneously state that Napoleon caused the War of 1812. Tolstoy debunks the great man theory of history in Chapter 2 of the first epilogue, and elsewhere.

Quote from the epilogue:

Biographical historians and historians of separate nations understand this force as a power inherent in heroes and rulers. In their narration events occur solely by the will of a Napoleon, and Alexander, or in general of the persons they describe. The answers given by this kind of historian to the question of what force causes events to happen are satisfactory only as long as there is but one historian to each event. As soon as historians of different nationalities and tendencies begin to describe the same event, the replies they give immediately lose all meaning, for this force is understood by them all not only differently but often in quite contradictory ways. One historian says that an event was produced by Napoleon's power, another that it was produced by Alexander's, a third that it was due to the power of some other person. Besides this, historians of that kind contradict each other even in their statement as to the force on which the authority of some particular person was based.

Second Epilogue, concept note 8

The aim of history fallacy

Summary:

Another faulty notion which one often finds in modern histories is the idea that the flow of history is under the guidance of abstract conceptual aims. Under this theory, for example, one might state that the cause of the French Revolution was justice in the abstract. Tolstoy rejected the idea that history is guided by the existence of a known aim to which individual nations or humanity at large are tending. He discusses this notion in the second chapter of the first epilogue, the first chapter of the second epilogue, and elsewhere.

Quote from the epilogue:

Modern history has rejected the beliefs of the ancients without replacing them by a new conception, and the logic of the situation has obliged the historians, after they had apparently rejected the divine authority of the kings and the "fate" of the ancients, to reach the same conclusion by another road, that is, to recognize (1) nations guided by individual men, and (2) the existence of a known aim to which these nations and humanity at large are tending.

Second Epilogue, concept note 9

History is more than a mere list of events.

Summary:

Another faulty notion of the old paradigm of history was that history can be reduced to a mere listing of events, i.e. only saying what happened. Under the new paradigm, understanding the causes and meanings behind these events is essential.

Quote from the epilogue:

Modern history replying to these questions says: you want to know what this movement means, what caused it, and what force produced these events? Then listen: "Louis XIV was a very proud and self-confident man; he had such and such mistresses and such and such ministers and he ruled France badly. His descendants were weak men and they too ruled France badly. And they had such and such favorites and such and such mistresses. Moreover, certain men wrote some books at that time. At the end of the eighteenth century there were a couple of dozen men in Paris who began to talk about all men being free and equal. This caused people all over France to begin to slash at and drown one another. They killed the king and many other people. At that time there was in France a man of genius—Napoleon. He conquered everybody everywhere—that is, he killed many people because he was a great genius. And for some reason he went to kill Africans, and killed them so well and was so cunning and wise that when he returned to France he ordered everybody to obey him, and they all obeyed him. ...

Second Epilogue, concept note 10

Modern histories often forget that causes and effects must be proportional.

Summary:

Another common problem with modern histories is that they forget that causes and effects must be proportional.

Quote from the epilogue:

The only conception that can explain the movement of the locomotive is that of a force commensurate with the movement observed. The only conception that can explain the movement of the peoples is that of some force commensurate with the whole movement of the peoples. Yet to supply this conception various historians take forces of different kinds, all of which are incommensurate with the movement observed.

Second Epilogue, concept note 11

In the old paradigm, power was often incorrectly considered the cause of history.

Summary:

Tolstoy points out that a common error in modern histories is the idea that power itself causes historical events to happen. The closely relates to the idea that power is granted to rulers by the will of the people. According to Tolstoy, power is a phenomenon of history rather than a cause. Moreover, Tolstoy did not believe that individuals become leaders because power is transferred to them.

Quote from the epilogue:

What causes historical events? Power. What is power? Power is the collective will of the people transferred to one person. Under what condition is the will of the people delegated to one person? On condition that that person expresses the will of the whole people. That is, power is power: in other words, power is a word the meaning of which we do not understand. If the realm of human

knowledge were confined to abstract reasoning, then having subjected to criticism the explanation of "power" that juridical science gives us, humanity would conclude that power is merely a word and has no real existence. But to understand phenomena man has, besides abstract reasoning, experience by which he verifies his reflections. And experience tells us that power is not merely a word but an actually existing phenomenon. Not to speak of the fact that no description of the collective activity of men can do without the conception of power, the existence of power is proved both by history and by observing contemporary events.

Second Epilogue, concept note 12

The effect of free will on the flow of history is negligible.

Summary:

Modern approaches to history (i.e the old paradigm) hold that free will shapes historical movements, which is like saying that a planet's path in space is determined by the planet. To move to the new paradigm, we have to recognize that movement is inevitably controlled by real world conditions.

Quote from the epilogue:

As in the question of astronomy then, so in the question of history now, the whole difference of opinion is based on the recognition or nonrecognition of something absolute, serving as the measure of visible phenomena. In astronomy it was the immovability of the earth, in history it is the independence of personality—free will. As with astronomy the difficulty of recognizing the motion of the earth lay in abandoning the immediate sensation of the earth's fixity and of the motion of the planets, so in history the difficulty of recognizing the subjection of personality to the laws of space, time, and cause lies in renouncing the direct feeling of the independence of one's own personality. But as in astronomy the new view said: "It is true that we do not feel the movement of the earth, but by admitting its immobility we arrive at absurdity, while by admitting its motion (which we do not feel) we arrive at laws," so also in history the new view says: "It is true that we are not conscious of our dependence, but by admitting our free will we arrive at absurdity, while by admitting our dependence on the external world, on time, and on cause, we arrive at laws." In the first case it was necessary to renounce the consciousness of an unreal immobility in space and to recognize a motion we did not feel; in the present case it is similarly necessary to renounce a freedom that does not exist, and to recognize a dependence of which we are not conscious.

Maude Chapter to Pevear and Volokhonsky page number Crosswalk

Maude Chapter to Pevear and Volokhonsky page number Crosswalk

Maude Chapter to Pevear and Volokhonsky page number Crosswalk

Maude Chapter to Pevear and Volokhonsky page number Crosswalk

Maude Chapter to Pevear and Volokhonsky page number Crosswalk

Maude Chapter to Pevear and Volokhonsky page number Crosswalk

Maude Chapter to Pevear and Volokhonsky page number Crosswalk

Maude Chapter to Pevear and Volokhonsky page number Crosswalk